



# AWAKENING

BOOK 01

*Beyond*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Awakening

(仿如昨日)

by

BEYOND

# Synopsis

---

A martial art expert from the Song dynasty lives like a Phoenix that can live again in another body after death.

This time, he happened to take over the body of a Japanese high schooler who is also a victim of bullying and has a bit complicated family circumstances.

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by subudai11 @ [subudai11](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1

---

Tokyo, Japan. In the corner of a high school.

"Please. Stop... Please." The teenage boy buried his head in his arms.

"I told yesterday you to bring me the money. How dare you not follow my order. Go to hell." The taller boy of the group kicked at his stomach.

The boy instantly threw up as he cried in pain.

"Such a disgusting person." A boy with an earring on his left ear spit on him then stepped aside. Another boy in a red shirt kept beating on him.

"He's at it again. Is he high?"

"It seems so."

"That's enough, Nobita. Or do you want to go to the juvenile detention center again?"

Red shirt hesitated then stopped.

"Remember, if you don't bring me the money tomorrow, I will play a more enjoyable game with you."

"He's feinting death again. Let's go to the arcades."

"I'm not going. I still have classes."

"Stop acting like a good student. You're interested in that new female teacher right? Though she does have great curves and a pretty face. We should get an opportunity to play with her some day."

"No problem."

The three boys left as they talked.

The corner returned to its serenity, just like nothing happened. Except for the boy lying on the ground.

After a while, he slowly got up. He took out tissues and wiped away the crap on his face and shirt. Then picked up his bag and quietly walked to class.

He kept his head down as he entered the room to hide his bruises.

As soon as he sat down, someone touched his shoulder from behind. It was Mizato Kazuo.

"Yamamoto's group beat you up again?"

"No, I accidentally fell."

"Stop lying. I can tell from your face. Luckily I paid my protection money a few days ago. Otherwise I'll be in the same boat right now."

"Do you know Awata Rumiko from class 3?" Mizato suddenly closed up on him and said in a low voice.

"The best looking girl in class 3?"

"Right. I think she's just a bitch. I saw her on the street yesterday holding hands with a guy. And you know what happened?"

Masashi was also curious.

"I followed behind them and saw them went into a love hotel. Surprise right? This bitch holds herself aloof normally, no one would have guessed she's such a slut. I freaking want to do her!"

Masashi was surprised but all he could think about was getting the money by tomorrow. That killed any mood he had.

Masashi felt jealous as he looked at Mizato. Mizato's family was rich so he was ok with paying the protection fees. As to him, he only get tiny bit of allowance every month. Even a new game would take a long time to save up for. Thinking of this, he couldn't

help but blame his divorced parents.

(If only that ugly sister dies, then I can double my allowance.) This thought scared him and he shook his head vigorously as if to shake the thought away.

"What are you doing?"

"Uh. Nothing, just feeling a little headache."

The school bell rang. The students took out their textbooks and the room quieted down.

"Good morning, students." The female teacher smiled.

"Good morning, Miss Naoko."

Beautiful women had their advantages. Even though she had only been here for not long, her classes were the most popular.

(This is the woman Yamamoto wants to bang?) He recalled their conversation.

(How would she look naked?) Masashi got excited as he stared at her mature body.

(But this is the woman Yamamoto wants, I won't have any



chance.)

"Masashi kun, what's wrong? Are you not feeling well?"

"I..." Masashi stood up in a panic when she suddenly called his name.

Miss Naoko noticed something was abnormal with him since the beginning of the class. He kept his head down and looked out of spirits.

"Your face has bruises. What happened?"

"I... I accidentally fell."

"Then be careful next time. Do you want to go to the infirmary?"

"No... No need."

"Really?"

"Really. Thank you sensei." That last line was sincere. No one ever cared about him that much aside from his mother. He regretted the nasty thoughts he just had about Miss Naoko.

Time flew by and it was noon. The students took out their bento.

Masashi waited for quite a while until that bookworm sister of his called his name from the door.

"You're finally here. Do you know how long I've been waiting." Masashi walked over as he suppressed his anger from the hunger.

"You don't have to wait." Hirota Kazumi said with an indifferent tone.

"You..." He grabbed the bento from her hand angrily then walked back to his seat.

"It seems like you sister needs some discipline. Do you want me to give it a try?" Mizato said with a strange tone.

Masashi had seemed his share of AV to know what he meant by discipline.

"No thanks." He replied with that same indifferent tone as his sister.

(Even though I don't like that ugly girl, but she's still my sister.)

"That's a pity."

His head was in a chaos during the rest of his classes. He couldn't think of any place to obtain that money.

(It seems like I have to use my last trick.)

And so, in order to avoid the bullying, Masashi took a week of sick leave. As to what happens after a week, only time will tell.

Even though he tried not to think of school. As the end of the week was getting close, tomorrow was the last day, he no longer had any mood and threw away the controller.

He was getting more irritated the more he thought about it and walked out of his house to relax.

He still didn't know where to go as he walked mindlessly in the streets. In the end, he went to the arcade that he frequented.

Masashi played from noon to evening in the arcade as if to numb himself.

On the way back home, he saw an elderly woman climbing up the hill with a walking stick.

Suddenly, an idea came to his mind.

His heart was beating faster and faster as he looked at this lonely old woman and the dimly lit street.

(Once I succeed, I will have the money to pay the protection money and perhaps extras to build the newest Gundam model.) He

licked his lips as his impulse grew.

After a round of internal struggle, his desires overtook him. He ran toward the old woman.

## Chapter 2

---

When he was only 200 meters away from the old woman, a shadow flew past him and reached the old woman from her left.

"Ah! Help! Robbery! Robbery..." The shadow sprinted away with her wailer as she screamed.

Masashi was shocked to witness a robbery at such close distance. Yet he forgot that was what he planned to do also.

"Catch the robber! Someone! Boy, hurry, go catch the robber! Hurry..." The old woman saw Masashi and pleaded for help.

"I... I'm not..." He didn't know what to do.

"Go chase him, hurry." The old woman was going crazy.

Masashi's mind went blank then he followed her words without thinking.

Unfortunately for both the robber and him, road constructions blocked the robber's path.

The robber turned around and took out a dagger.

"Kid, who told you to mind someone's business?"

(What am I doing?) Masashi asked himself.

"I... I don't have anything to do with it. I don't know anything."

"Then go to hell." The robber ran at him and stabbed his stomach.

"Uh." Masashi looked at the knife in disbelief.

"I... I don't want to die. No, I don't want to die..."

"Remember to mind your business in your afterlife." The robber pulled out the knife.

Blood gushed out and Masashi slowly fell to the ground.

As his vision started to blur, he was scared. He never thought about dying, even when Yamamoto beat him. He knew they wouldn't kill him. But at this moment, he realized he was going to die. Finally, he couldn't see anything anymore.

"I'm sorry. The patient died during transportation to the hospital. We couldn't do anything." The doctors said to the middle aged officer.

"Is that so? That's unfortunate such a good kid died like this. Have you notified his family?"

"Yes, his sister is outside. His parents will probably arrive tonight."

"Where's his body?"

"In the morgue. Do you want to take a look?"

"No, we will send the forensics over later. I hope his parents won't feel too sad."

Suddenly a lightning flashed across the sky. The sound of thunder shocked the two of them.

"Seems like it's going to rain."

"Yeah."

Kazumi was a little sad after hearing the event. Even though they didn't have the best relationship, but they still lived together for so many years. "I can't believe he just died like that."

"Have you caught the robber?" She quickly returned to her normal calmness.

"No, but we will do our best. Rest assured."

"What does it matter. He's already dead."

At the same time, a ball of light surrounded by lightning appeared in the morgue.

It flew to one of the drawer as if something attracted it. Then it slowly disappeared.

Two past midnight. Masashi's mother came to the hospital in fatigue.

As soon as she saw her daughter, she asked. "How's Masashi? Is it life threatening?"

"I'm sorry, miss. Your son was just confirmed dead. I'm really sorry." The officer said when he saw Kazumi couldn't answer her mother.

"No. You're lying. Masashi won't die. I don't believe it." Rumiko stumbled and almost fell.

Kazumi immediately got a hold of her mother. "Mom, it's true. Masashi is dead." Then she turned her head away as to not look at her mother's expression.

"No. Masashi won't die... he won't die..." Rumiko cried on her daughter's shoulder.



After a while, she wiped away her tear and tried to talk calmly.  
"What happened to Masashi? Please tell me."

After hearing everything from the officer, Rumiko stood up.

"Mom, what are you doing?" Kazumi was scared of her doing something out of the ordinary.

"I want to see Masashi."

"Please wait a moment. I will let the doctors know."

"Thank you, officer Maeda."

Inside the morgue, the doctors pulled open one of the drawer.

"Masashi..." Rumiko broke down as soon as she saw her son and cried on his chest.

She suddenly got up in disbelief after some time. Then she placed her head on his heart. She felt strange, then surprised, then nervous, and finally joy.

The doctor and everyone felt something was wrong.

"Mom, what happened to you?" Kazumi asked lightly.

"Miss, you have our condolences." The doctor had seen enough of this.

The officer was about to comfort her.

"He's not dead. He's still alive. Hurry, doctor, please save him. Masashi is still alive!"

It seemed like the worst possible outcome. The doctor sighed. "Miss, your son is really dead."

"No, doctor. Please take another look. He still has heartbeats." Rumiko grabbed the doctor's hands.

"What?" Everyone was shocked.

The doctor walked over calmly and took out his stethoscope as requested.

Shortly after, his face was filled with fear and disbelief. He listened to it again then ran outside. "Get people over here, this patient is still alive..."

In a special care unit, a boy with a pale face lied on the bed. A middle aged woman fell asleep on his side.

Suddenly he opened his eyes and looked around, then looked at his hands, touched his face and said. "The same thing again. How

many times are you going to toy with me."

The woman woke up to his voice.

"Masashi, you're finally awake." She cried in joy.

"You're his mother?"

"What's wrong? Are you not feeling well?" Rumiko couldn't understand what her son was saying.

He just realized he was speaking in Chinese while this woman was speaking Japanese. It seemed like he was currently in Japan.

He organized his thoughts and said in less than fluent Japanese. "I'm fine. Don't worry."

"Really? Do you feel any pain?"

Masashi shook his head with a smile.

"Wait here, I will call the doctor." Rumiko felt something was different but she didn't think much about it.

After thoroughly examining his body, the doctor concluded he needed to rest for the injury on his stomach. Other than that, there was no other problem. Although his memories were disorganized,

but that might be due to a lack of blood going to the brain due to the injury. It should recover soon.

Rumiko was relieved from hearing the results.

"You scared your mother so much." Her eyes became red as she thought about it.

The boy felt touched looking at that caring face. He made his decision.

"Mom, it's alright. I am fine."

Ever since Masashi grew up, he had not been so intimate to her. Although she tried to work hard for the future of her son and daughter, her job separated them and she couldn't see them more than a few times a year. Masashi was becoming more distant every time they meet and would only ask for money. She couldn't do anything but felt disappointed.

She held onto his hands and cried in tears from his gentle actions.

The door was pushed open. Kazumi came in with a bag of apples and saw her mother crying.

The boy searched his memories and learned that this was his sister.

"Mom, stop crying or Kazumi is going to make fun of you." He wiped away her tears.

"Kazumi, you're here."

"Mom, are you alright?"

"Baka, what can be wrong with me. You should ask your brother instead."

"Masashi, are you hungry? I will go buy you some porridge. The doctor said your injury isn't healed and you can only eat liquid food for now. Wait a bit, I will be back very soon. Kazumi, stay with your brother here."

"Mom, just tell the nurses to buy it. You had it tough these few days. You should take a rest."

"I'm fine." Rumiko was happy hearing these words.

Kazumi was surprised at the interaction.

"You... You're really Masashi?"

"What do you say?" The boy smiled.

"I... I don't know."

"Of course I am Masashi. Hirota Masashi. I know I was horrible and said many things that hurt mother and you. After this experience I have think through a lot of things. Just like you saw, I have changed. Can you accept this answer? I would also like to take this chance and apologize. Will you forgive me?"

The boy's Japanese has recovered to normal fluency after a day of conversation with Rumiko. Although there were some accents but they were not easy to notice.

"You... You don't have to apologize to me."

"Come, sit down. Aren't you tired?"

"Kazumi, you know, we have a good mother. I wasn't in a good mood when I woke up but this time actually doesn't seem all that bad."

# Chapter 3

---

It only took a week for the recovery. Even the doctors were amazed at the speed of it. Rumiko wanted him to stay for a few more days but he insisted on leaving. As they were being discharged, the hospital wouldn't accept any payment.

Rumiko was a traditional woman so she went to the director and insisted on paying. In the end, the director and Masashi's doctor kneeled down to beg her, which left her in shock and confusion.

"Mom, it's simple. If you didn't come to see me at the end, they will probably dispose me like a corpse. That's unintentional homicide. Am I right?" Masashi smiled.

The director and the doctor's faces turned and kneeled back down again immediately.

(So that's why Masashi was put in a special care unit and they didn't want to charge for anything.)

"To be honest, you saved me after all. So I won't get to the bottom of this. "

"Director san, and doctor Nagasaki. Thank you for your care. I am truely grateful." Masashi said sincerely as he lifted the two men.

The director and doctor were touched. The director even

suggested to waive any fees in future visits for him and his family.

"How can I accept this?" He said with a tone of justice.

"Masashi is right. We can't accept such a valuable gift. It's getting late, we have to leave. Please take care."

"Miss, please accept our regards or we will kneel here forever."

"But..."

"Miss, please accept it."

Rumiko had no choice but to accept it.

The director and doctor cheered in joy as she nodded.

Kazumi, who watched Masashi's smile through the whole event, felt a shiver through her spine. The victims were cheering in joy when he was the one that received so much. If she wasn't so familiar with his face, she would have assumed this was another person in front of him.

As they were leaving, Masashi picked up Rumiko's bag. But she wanted to stop him due to his injury.

"Mom, I'm fine."



It was the second time she heard this. The warm and sweet feeling almost made her shed tears again.

A little bit after they left, officer Maeda approached them.

"Hello, Mrs. Hirota, Masashi and Kazumi. I heard the doctor said you were being discharged today so I am here to pick you up."

"That's too nice of you, officer Maeda. You've done so much for us, we can't cause you any more troubles."

"That's too polite of you, Mrs. Hirota. Please call me Maeda, that's how my colleagues call me. I came here to express my gratitude to Masashi san on behalf of my colleagues. Samaritans like him are few and far between in this age. Are you tired? My car is right outside. Please come with me." He took Masashi's bag and took the lead.

"Right, Masashi. We have caught the robber."

"Oh really?"

"That guy was cunning. He knew we were looking for him so he ran to Hokkaido. If he didn't get recognized when he got in a drunken brawl, we wouldn't be able to catch him so quick."

"What about the old woman?" Rumiko asked.

"She's fine. Although the robber used up all her money. But that can't be helped.""

"Serves her right to make a high schooler chase the robber and didn't even come to visit Masashi."

"Kazumi, don't talk like this. She might have her difficulties."

"Mom, you're too kind hearted. It's easy to get deceived like this."

"Officer Maeda, you still don't have a wife or girlfriend right?" Masashi suddenly asked.

"How... How did you know?" Maeda replied awkwardly.

"Masashi, that's not polite. How can you ask such questions."

"Mom, I am just expressing my concern for officer Maeda. He's not young after all."

"Masashi!"

"Fine, I won't ask. Don't get mad, mom."

"Uh. I want to ask how do you know I don't have a wife or girlfriend?" Maeda couldn't keep his curiosity.

"Mom, it's not my fault he's asking me. Can I answer it?"

"You little..."

"It's simple. There are no female items in your car. Even though you might have cleaned your car before you left, the sanitary of some corners are still not ideal. Just like I am stepping on two cigarette butts. You also don't smell of any perfume. Don't be suspicious of my habits, I just have a very sensitive nose. I've seen you twice wearing a shirt without fixing its collar. So in conclusion, you don't have a wife or girlfriend. Of course there are exceptions. Perhaps your wife or girlfriend is a lazy person."

"Incredible. If you become a detective, then I am going to lose my job."

"That's good, I will hire you then."

Rumiko and Maeda both laughed.

"Who's willing to marry people like me. I am so busy worth the job normally I couldn't even find time for a date. I also don't know how to flatter girls. My family arranged a few blind dates but none of them worked out."

"Maeda san, please don't give up. God won't abandon nice guys like you. You will definitely find a suitable woman."

"Thank you, Mrs. Hirota."

They reached Masashi's apartment and Maeda protectively carried the bag inside.

"Maeda san, I don't know how I can thank you. Please come in for a cup of tea."

"No, I still have some work to do. Next time."

"Next time then. Thank you again for your care during these few days." Rumiko bowed in front of him.

"You're too polite."

As Rumiko went inside, Masashi walked over to Maeda.

"Mom, you two get in first. I still have something to say to Maeda san."

After Rumiko went inside, Masashi stared at him with a serious expression.

"What's wrong? Masashi." Maeda got a little bit anxious from the stare.

Masashi didn't said anything and just looked at him. "How old

are you?"

"Why do you ask?"

"Don't ask why. Just answer."

"Fine, I'm 35 this year."

"Good, not a large gap. Where were you born in?"

"Nagasaki."

"Any brothers or sisters?"

"One brother and two sister."

"Like to drink?"

"A little bit sometimes."

"Smokes frequently?"

"Yes."

"You like my mother?"

"Yes. You, what did you said!?"

"So it's true. I wasn't being oversensitive."

"That was a slip of the tongue. Don't be mistaken."

"Then I will ask you again. Are you interested in my mother? If you are a man then don't deny it."

(What kind of logic is this?) Maeda finally lowered his head.

"There's something that you might not know. My mother has separated with that irresponsible father for four years. She's been alone all these years."

"Really?" Maeda suddenly raised his head.

"Yes. It seems like there's no chance of them getting back together. If you like my mother, I won't prevent you from approaching her. But you have to promise me to be nice to her. Otherwise I will make you wish you were dead." Masashi's eyes changed. Maeda couldn't describe that pair of eyes. His mind was blank and his body shuddered.

"Good, I've said everything I should. The rest is up to you." Masashi patted his shoulder and went inside the apartment.

Maeda looked at his back and realized he didn't understand this high school boy a bit.

# Chapter 4

---

Rumiko stayed in the apartment for two days, making sure Masashi was fine before going back to work in Nagoya.

Life seemingly returned to normal. But Kazumi noticed several long distance calls in the phone bill. All of them were out of the country yet she couldn't find the actual numbers.

Masashi was sitting on his bed in a weird posture. He opened his eyes after a while and stretched.

(This body is so weak. The muscles has no elasticity. Reaction is slow. It's worthless aside from its age. Seems like I will have to create a training plan to get this body back to average before it stops growing.)

Masashi began creating the training plan when Kazumi knocked on the door.

"What's it, Kazumi?"

"I want to ask what's with the phone bill this month?"

"Oh, I met a few friends on ICQ. I have to call them to discuss somethings. Don't worry, I won't make any more international calls. I know it's hard for mom to earn the money."



There was nothing more Kazumi could say, so she left the room.

"They should be almost here." Masashi muttered to himself.

Masashi stood in front of the school in a new uniform. For the first time, Kazumi came to school with him.

The classroom was noisy as usual. He found his seat based on his memory. Just as he sat down, someone yelled. "Ah. It's Hirota Masashi. He's back. When did he come back?"

A group of people surrounded him.

"Masashi, I heard you were critically injured chasing a robber. That was amazing of you."

"Were you afraid at the time? I wouldn't be brave enough to chase."

"I heard you stopped breathing, how did you revive?"

"Masashi, give me a signature."

He couldn't stand these people and stood up.

"Masashi, where are you going?"

"To take a dump."

The room fell into a silence.

The principal came over during class to give a presentation of his heroic act in exaggerations. Masashi didn't even know he was so courageous and fought the robber for two hours. The amount of details made it seem like the principal himself was the robber.

In the end, the principal invited Masashi to say something. It was natural for him to want to advertise this shitty school when there's an opportunity.

Masashi hated this kind of scenes but he had no choice but to get on the stage.

"I don't have anything good to say. The principal had said everything. I would only like to add one thing, if you encounter this situation, remember to buy insurance first. I'm done."

The half asleep students were shocked then applauded wildly and some even whistled.

The principal and dean were wiping sweat off their foreheads.

While Masashi just stared out the window.

"Isn't this our hero Hirota Masashi kun? Long time no see,

Masashi kun. We miss you so much." Yet that tone didn't sound a bit like its words.

Yamamoto's group of three blocked Masashi in the hall.

"I cant believe this garbage became a hero. It seems like I am a superman."

"Anything you want from me?"

"Not much, just that we haven't seen you for so long. We want to have a chat."

"Oh, is that so. Here? Or should we go to our usual place?"

Yamamoto's group looked at each other. This guy's reaction was strange. Usually his face would turn pale upon seeing them and couldn't even speak. Why was he so calm all of a sudden?

The usual place was that corner of shame. Masashi was feeling the memory of this body as he came here again.

"Say, do you want money or just want to beat me this time?"

"Fuck, don't act so cocky kid. I will make you kneel down and beg us."

A smile crept up his mouth. As he was about to test the results of his training these few days, he sensed something then stopped.

"What are you doing." A voice stopped Toku from hitting Masashi.

Naoko ran over to them. "What were you trying to do to Masashi kun?"

"I..."

"Naoko sensei, we were just playing around. It's been a long time since we saw each other. We all miss Masashi kun so much so it might seem a little rough. Please don't be mistaken."

"Really? I can't feel that you were just playing around. Masashi, tell me, what happened? Are they bullying you? Don't be afraid to tell the truth. Sensei will help you."

"I don't know if they are playing with me or not, but it looks like their games aren't something a normal person can stand. But since I am not hurt, there's no evidence to back anything." Masashi answered calmly.

Naoko frowned. "If that's the case, I will take care of this. You guys go back to class. Masashi stay here, I have something to say to you."

Yamamoto gave Masashi a stare then looked at Naoko sensei then

led the other two away.

(Oh, it looks like Yamamoto is about to do it.) Masashi could feel the desires in Yamamoto's eyes when he looked at Naoko sensei.

"Masashi, tell me, do they bully you frequently?"

"Do you want to hear the truth or lies?"

"Of course the truth."

"Ok, I will tell you. I was like that before but now I'm not sure."

"Then why didn't you notify the teachers?"

"Sensei, you are too naive. Teachers are not police and bullying is unavoidable in any school. I was too weak before, that's why I was chosen as the target. This is also survival of the fittest. Don't worry, I am not the Masashi I used to be."

"You seem like you changed a lot." She suddenly noticed the deep and clear eyes of this boy. And those eyes attracted all her attention.

"Instead of worrying about me, you should worry about yourself. Naoko sensei."

She immediately woke up when she heard the word sensei. "What, what did you say?" Her heart was pounding and her face blushed. (How could I stared at a student like this.)

"Do you know pubescent wolves are more offensive than mature wolves? I'll give you a word of advice. Don't trust anyone too easily, especially the boys. If there's nothing else, then I'll leave."

"Wait, what did you mean?"

"Go back and think about it. Oh, there's something I forgot to ask you, how did you know I'm here?"

"I saw Yamamoto brought you away and afraid something might go wrong. So I followed you."

(This is a kind hearted woman like mother.) In this moment, Masashi decided to protect this woman.

"You're a good teacher. Thank you."

"That's too polite of you. This is also the responsibility of a teacher."

"Ok, I really have to get back to class. I took too many days off recently."

"Wait for me, I will walk back with you."

"Whatever."

"You can go home first. Don't wait for me for dinner, just leave a bit for me."

"Ok." Kazumi's tone was indifferent as always, but she was curious to why this guy had been coming home late these few days. Even though she was curious, she wouldn't actually ask him because of her personality.

After Kazumi left, Masashi sat down and focused his mind. His mind flew into Naoko sensei's office then locked onto her. Even though he couldn't see or hear, he could sense every action clearly, even her breathing and emotional fluctuations.

But this ability couldn't be used by humans. It was an ability created after so many years of evolving his soul.

A few minutes later, he noticed her breathing was getting heavy. Her body temperature was increasing and she took off her jacket subconsciously.

Then he sensed someone moving close to the office from outside. "So that's it. They are not actually stupid."

Yamamoto opened the door and saw Naoko sensei's face turning red. Then said to the other two. "Looks like the meal is ready."

# Chapter 5

---

Toku and Nobita smiled creepily.

The three of them closed the door then took out a stocking to cover his head, just like a robber.

"Turn on the DV, I can't hold it anymore." Yamamoto said as he took off his clothes.

Masashi figured out what they were trying to do. Filming the victim in case she learned the truth then they could use it as a threat.

(It's time to take action, otherwise it will be too late.)

Yamamoto had already stripped Naoko sensei's shirt. Their hearts were pounding so fast as they looked at this mature body.

"Yamamoto, hurry. I can't stand it."

"I know. Shut up." He pulled Naoko sensei's skirt violently.

Suddenly the room went black.

"Shit, what happened? A black out?"



Then they heard the door opened and a figure ran in. It scared the three of them. "Who's there?"

That person didn't say anything but ran toward them in incredible speed.

The three of them fell to the ground before they could react.

Masashi looked at his finger with pride. (It seemed like my kung fu hasn't regressed.)

"En... Ah..." Naoko sensei's moan reached his ears.

Masashi turned on the light and his mind went blank for a moment as he saw the body. He took a deep breath and carried her to the teacher's bathroom on the side.

He turned on the faucet and pushed her head under it.

"Cough... What are you doing..." Finally she started to regain consciousness.

Masashi let go of her and handed her a towel.

"You, you're masashi?" Naoko sensei looked at him with confusion.

"Come, wash your face first."

"Why are you here?"

"Look at yourself first."

"Ah!" She screamed with unbearable volume then covered her body.

"Did, did you do this?" Her voice was angry.

"Not me. It's Yamamoto's group. I knocked them out. They're still lying outside. You can go take a look."

"Really?"

"Just go take a look and you can tell."

She tried to get up but her chest was still uncovered so she immediately crouched back down.

"Wear this." Masashi handed her his uniform.

"Thank, thank you."

"I will wait for you outside."

(Such a considerate person.) Naoko thought.

Finally she came out wearing the uniform. He could tell she also fixed herself a bit.

"Thankfully they didn't tore apart your skirt. Otherwise I might be in bad luck."

Naoko sensei looked at his pants, and suddenly felt an impulse to laugh. But she held it to herself.

"Those guys are here, see?" Masashi pulled off the stocking on Yamamoto's head.

Naoko understood what had happened from the naked Yamamoto and the DV.

"Did you drink anything someone gave you?"

"A girl gave me a can of coke. Can it be her?"

"Looks like it. You were drugged and they almost succeeded."

"Then, then did they... do anything to me?" She felt difficult asking her student such question.

"Didn't you hear, I said almost. That means no. I knocked them out when they were about to take off your skirt."

"How did you knock them out?" She couldn't imagine Masashi taking all three of them at once.

"Simple, by ambush. Any other questions?" He didn't want to delve on this question.

"No."

"Then you can go back first. I will handle them."

Naoko was scared. "How are you going to handle them?"

Masashi laughed. "You've seen too many movies. I don't want to be a murderer."

Hearing that, she felt she was oversensitive.

Masashi pulled the three of them to the classroom next door, then put Yamamoto on the podium. Suddenly he saw Naoko sensei standing by the door. "Why are you still here?"

"Can, can you go back with me? I am scared." After experiencing this, a woman's nature overcame her pride as a teacher. She was just like a little girl scared of darkness.

He frowned. "Fine. Wait for me outside. Best if you can drive your car over. Ok?"

"Ok, I will wait for you. Hurry." Even her tone sounded like a little girl.

After the unnecessary audience went away, Masashi was fiddling with the three unconscious boys.

Once he got them into postures, he found that coke from Naoko sensei's office then searched Nobita's body. There was indeed a bag of blue pills. He mixed the pills in the coke and poured it into their mouths. After all that's done, he wiped his fingerprints from the can and threw it into the garbage can.

"Aphrodisiac plus ecstasy. Then the ultimate 69 position. So looking forward to this. I can't wait for the morning to come."

"Why are you so slow?"

"Let's go. I still have to go home for dinner."

"I can treat you. I want to thank you."

"Next time. I don't want people to mistake anything from the way you are dressed."

"Ok then."

Masashi looked at her. "Let me drive. You look like you're half awake."

"I don't know why but I feel drowsy."

"Don't worry, it's the effect from the pills. Just get a good night of sleep."

"If I am not mistaken, you're only 16. You still don't have a driving license."

"Don't worry, having a license and being able to drive are two different concepts."

"That means, you really don't have a license?" She asked in panic after processing his answer.

"It's fine. If we see the cops, we will just switch seats." He didn't want to give up the chance after not being able to drive for some many years. In just 8 seconds, the car accelerated from 30km to 120km.

Naoko sensei never knew her car could reach this kind of speed, but she wasn't happy about it in the tiniest bit. She held onto her seat belt tightly with a face of fear.

"Oh right, where do you live? I forgot to ask."

"What, you're asking this after driving for an hour!" Her body trembled.

(Forget it, he saved me after all.) She held her temper and gave him the directions patiently.

Masashi had to slow down the car because he was not familiar with the roads. And Naoko let out a sigh of relief.

"Let's play some songs."

Naoko turned on the radio and through it came a female voice.

"Love Me Tender. I never thought I would hear such an old song in this day."

"You also like this song?" Naoko was surprised.

"I used to have a friend that really liked this song, and sang it really well. Unfortunately she died."

Naoko fell into a silence.

"Sensei, how do we go from here?"

"Oh, make a right turn and we are there."

This was a two floor mansion with a very peaceful surrounding.

"Seems like teachers have pretty good salary. The rent of this place isn't cheap."

"It's nothing special. Do you want to come in, or wait for me to change and I can treat you to dinner."

"No thanks. You should take a good rest. See you." He turned around and walked away.

Naoko's face looked disappointed.

Then she suddenly saw him turning back and felt excited. She ran up to him.

"I forgot to tell you one more thing. Don't tell anyone what happened tonight. As to the reason, you will get it by tomorrow. Remember." He finally left.



# Chapter 6

---

Morning of the next day. Masashi hurriedly finished his breakfast. He couldn't wait to see the scene in school.

Somebody rang the door and Kazumi opened it.

"Masashi, someone's looking for you."

"What, me? Not the newspapers?"

"Are you Mr. Hirota Masashi?" A middle aged man in brand name suits asked politely.

"Yes, how can I help you?"

"Our boss wants to see you."

"Who is your boss?"

"Our boss is Mr. Rei"

"As expected. Can you wait until the afternoon, I have some things to do."

"But boss ordered me to invite you over today no matter what. Can you compromise?"

(He's still so impatient, haven't changed all these years.) Masashi sighed. "Fine, I will go with you now."

"Kazumi, can you help me take the day off?"

"I get it."

"Then let's go."

"Please follow me." The man invited him into a high end car, then went to the driver's seat.

(What kind of people did he meet?) Kazumi looked as the car drove away.

The driver parked the car and led Masashi into a mansion guarded with two men dressed in black suits and sunglasses.

"Our boss is inside. Please step in." Then he left.

(Wonder how much they've changed.) Masashi took a deep breath and pushed the door open.

There were four people sitting inside, three men and a woman. Also four bodyguards standing behind them.

All of them turned to Masashi as he entered. The thirty year young old man in the middle was dressed in black casual attire. He stood up immediately as he saw Masashi. Next to him was a middle age man in a white shirt, inspecting Masashi.

Masashi didn't say a word and just looked at the young man gently.

(This brat finally grew up.)

Then he turned to the man in white shirt and smiled. "Changan, you still haven't changed after all these years. People will assume you don't have a change of clothes for wearing shirts all day." It was in Chinese.

The man in white shirt was shocked then looked at him with surprise and disbelief.

"Who are you? Were you the one that gave me the call? And how did you know my number?" The young man didn't notice Changan's expression.

"It's been so many years and you're still so impatient. Don't you know it's annoying to ask so many questions at a time."

The man was getting irritated for being talked to like this by a high school boy. Then Masashi suddenly said. "Have you circumcised that foreskin of yours yet? You wouldn't be still keeping them after all these years right."

The room suddenly dropped to freezing temperature.

The only woman in the room couldn't hold it and laughed out loud. Changan also smiled. While the other people were holding onto their laughter.

"You... All of you get out!" The man's face turned red and shouted.

All that's left in the room were Masashi, the man, and Changan.

"Who are you?"

Masashi didn't say anything. He walked over to Changan and unsheathed the sword on the table next to him.

The man was shocked. He knew what this sword meant to Changan. Yet not only did he not stop the boy but instead smiled.

Before he could react, the boy began dancing with the sword.

The man's face was getting more serious as he watched. (This isn't possible, these techniques, no other person can use them, certainly not a high school boy.)

Changan was also excited yet he didn't show a bit of surprise. In the end, tears streamed down his face. "You're finally back."

"Hei, look carefully. This is how you use this technique." This line totally stunned the man.

At the end of his move, Masashi shot the sword into a tree.

"Hei, did you see it?" Masashi smiled at him.

"Sensei!" The man dropped to his knees in tears.

# Chapter 7

---

"That's basically it. Do you get it now?"

"So sensei you reincarnated in this high school boy's body? But you died ten years ago and this boy is only about 16. It doesn't add up."

"Shit, that was a waste of time explaining to you." Masashi knocked his head.

"I just can't understand. Why do you always hit me." ReiLi (Hei is a nickname) acted like a child. But it had been ten years since he was hit like this.

"This isn't normal reincarnation but taking over someone's body. When my soul is traveling through a place and someone died recently and if that person fits some other criterias. I'm not getting into the details, since you won't understand anyway. As long as all the criterias are met, then I will come back alive through this body. You get it now?"

"But sensei, why did you choose this boy. It feels so weird for me."

Masashi sighed. "That can't be helped. It's random every time. Can be a child, young man, old man, or even woman. The time is also random. It's only ten years this time but the one previously took 150 years. That's why I didn't tell you anything about this when I died."

"Isn't that good? You're an immortal now. Although your body has changed but you are still yourself."

"Is that so? If possible, I just want to die peacefully."

Changan and ReiLi thought about it and began to understand.

"But sensei, how did you become like this?"

"I was born in the Song Dynasty. My family was killed in a revenge, and my mother escaped with me. After learning the truth, I trained to avenge my father. I attained the height of sword using in a coincidence but when I went to seek revenge, my enemies were already killed by their enemies. Have you seen anything more sarcastic? Just like the plot of those cheap novels. I had no more goals to live for, then one time when I was practicing in the rain, I got struck by a lightning. Then it became like this."

ReiLi and Changan fell into silence.

Masashi laughed. "Stop acting so sentimental. Hei, go get some alcohol."

The next morning, Masashi woke up with a headache.

He went to the backyard and saw Changan practicing with his sword.

"Master." Changan bowed.

"Including the ten years I wasn't here, it's been thirty years already. You still won't stop calling me this." Masashi sighed again.

"You're always my master in my heart and I'm always your Changan."

"Hei probably caused you a lot of troubles these years. It's been hard on you."

"Master, even though ReiLi is a little impatient, but he's a smart person. He earned almost everything himself, I didn't help with much."

"Sensei, you're here. I couldn't find you and thought I was dreaming all along."

"Stop acting like a child, you're not a kid anymore." He recalled Hei followed him since he was a kid. "Oh right, why did you come find me so late. I thought you forgot about me."

"I wouldn't dare to. I thought this was a prank but who would've guessed you actually came back. After I was done with my business in the US and told Changan about it. He found that someone took a sum of money out of your savings in your personal bank. I thought the money was stolen and searched for you."



"I didn't know it's so convenient nowadays. It only took a phone call to make the transfer. I used to have to go in person in the past. Anyway, I need to ask you are the three gang rules I made still in effect?" Masashi became serious.

When Masashi made the gang, he made three rules that must be followed. The first was not selling drugs.

"Sensei, I never done anything against the rules and wouldn't let my men do them."

"Good, I believe you."

"Sensei, when are you coming back to the gang?"

"I won't go back."

"What? You created Black Dragon all by yourself. How can you not come back?"

"Black Dragon doesn't belong to myself anymore. It belongs to all of you. You've been managing it very well and I am happy about it. I am just here to see you. It's a blessing for people like me to be able to see friends and family that are still alive. Too many people died in my hands on my previous life. I'm tired and want to take a break. If possible, I just want to be a normal person in this life. Do you still want to get me back?"

ReiLi didn't know what to say.

"Don't worry, if anything happens to Black Dragon, I won't just sit there and watch. And you're not young anymore, go get a wife before it's too late."

"I, I still want to play for a few more years."

"Shit, aren't you afraid of getting AIDS."

As Masashi was about to leave, Reili pointed to the woman and man in the mansion. "Masashi, these two are in charge of our businesses in Tokyo. Sakurai Mion and Akamatsu Ryuichiro. If you need something, just order them."

The two of them bowed to Masashi.

"I hope I don't have much to ask of you. I am just a normal civilian after all."

Masashi turned to ReiLi. "Changan told me you have businesses to do tomorrow. You should leave early today."

"I want to stay with you for a few more days."

"There's still a lot of time left. Just go, I will contact you if something comes up."

# Chapter 8

---

It was only ten in the morning when he reached home. Masashi decided to go to class in the afternoon. He found his ID in the drawer and took a taxi to a bank.

"I have some money being transferred over from the Swiss Union Bank. I want to know if it's here yet."

"Please wait a moment." The teller looked at her screen in disbelief and her hands began shaking.

"Are, are you, Mr. Hiro, Hirota Masashi san?"

"Isn't it written in my ID?"

"Please, please wait a moment." She immediately ran to look for her manager.

After a while, the teller came back with a fat middle age man. After taking a look at the screen, then at Masashi, he was also in disbelief.

"Is this Hirota Masashi san?"

"I am."

"Because the fund is too big, we need some time to process it. Can

you please wait a moment?"

"Fine, but hurry up."

The manager immediately invited Masashi to the VIP waiting room.

He didn't know his photo was sent to the police.

"How's it? Is this the real person?" The manager asked.

"Based on the data, he's the real person. Hirota Masashi, male, 16 years old, attending school in Hirai Middle School as a first year high school student."

"He's only 16 years old and already has over one billion USD. Hurry, sign him up as our VIP immediately."

"Yes, manager."

Finally the transfer was completed. The manager and teller handed Masashi his passbook and credit card with the utmost respect.

Once he came to the school, he saw that the entrance was closed and several news agency vans blocked the road.

(Even the news reporters are here. Seems like things escalated.)

Masashi entered the school from a back door to avoid getting in the camera.

When he got in the classroom, he found out all his classes were changed to self study and the room was as noisy as a market.

"Can I ask what happened?"

"Oh it's Masashi. You didn't know?"

"I took a day off yesterday."

"That's unfortunate you weren't here yesterday. You wouldn't believe what happened..."

Even though he guessed the results but the development was much more colorful than he thought.

When the students entered the classroom in the morning, they were greeted by a horrendous scene. Three naked boys were holding onto each other in a nightmarish posture. A few girls fainted immediately.

When the dean came over and woke up the three boys, they attacked him and attempted to sexually assault him. This middle aged man never thought of this day. His screams almost left a scar

in the students.

Fortunately the other male teachers stopped the sexual assault and saved the dean's chastity. But all the teachers involved were assaulted in various degrees. Two of them were still under therapy.

Then someone called the police and they brought the three boys to the hospital.

The police suspected the three boys overdosed stimulants and ecstasy, leading to their behavior. And they were currently going through treatments.

After hearing what happened, Masashi regretted deeply for not being able to see this with his own eyes. He also blamed ReiLi for making him miss the scene.

"Oh right, Masashi kun. Naoko sensei had been looking for you since yesterday. It looks like something urgent."

"Ok. Thank you. I will go look for her."

He came to the teachers' office and knocked.

"Please come in."

"Naoko sensei, were you looking for me?" Masashi acted like nothing happened.

"You're finally here. I thought you wouldn't come back to school." She sounded angry.

"I have some things to take care of yesterday. What can I help you with?"

"Stop acting innocent. Did you do this?" Naoko sensei opened up the newspapers and pointed at it.

Three high school boys attempted to sexually assault the dean. Masashi smiled as he looked at the headline.

"Don't you think that's going too far?" Naoko sensei looked at him seriously.

"Oh, is it?" Masashi slowly raised his head. "I don't know what I done that can be considered too far."

"You..."

"You're also half a victim. Do you think the girls they toyed with will think this is too much? I know what you want to say but please be aware that those guys are not human, just three beasts. Don't tell me they are still young, they are adults with officially issued IDs. I never go soft against beasts. This is barely a prank in my eyes."

Naoko sensei's head lowered as they stared at each other.

"Perhaps you're right, but..."

"When you eat a steak, have you ever thought that a cow died for you. When you eat an egg, have you ever thought about a little chick was stripped of his chance to live. I bet you haven't. I also don't have the energy to think about these. I only know that I will eat when I'm hungry, whether it's steak or eggs. People can have sympathy but you shouldn't give too much to sympathy."

"Thank you. I get it now." Naoko felt that she was like a little girl in front of Masashi.

"Now that you know what happened, remember not to tell anyone. Otherwise you will be the one that's in trouble. If there's nothing else, I will take my leave."

"Are you, you free tonight? I want to treat you to a dinner as thanks."

Masashi looked at those pure eyes of hers. "Sorry to make you spend the money. Is tomorrow alright?"

"Then I will pick you up tomorrow evening." Naoko said excitedly.

Masashi didn't know what Kazumi would think if she sees it. "I will go find you instead."



"Ok."

When he came back to the classroom, Mizato came over to him.  
"What did Naoko sensei want from you?"

"Nothing much, she just asked how my studies are doing."

"Oh, is it exciting staying with such a beauty? Her body is so sick." Mizato laughed creepily.

(Another beast.) Masashi just wanted to punch him in the face.

He ignored Mizato and walked right past him.

# Chapter 9

---

After school the next day. Masashi changed his school uniform to casual clothes at home, then took a taxi to Naoko-sensei's house.

A girl he hadn't seen before opened the door. "Excuse me, who are you looking for?"

Wrong address? He checked the house number again. "I am looking for Naoko-sensei."

"Sister? Who are you?"

So this is her younger sister. "My name is Hirota Masashi, a student of your sister."

"Oh, then come on in. She's taking a bath."

A white puppy ran over and stared at him with caution.

The girl picked it up and said. "Shasha, greet nii-san." The puppy actually barked.

Masashi smiled bitterly. When did I become brothers with a dog.

"Ai-chan, was someone on the door?" Naoko-sensei came out in a bathroom before long.

"Hi, Naoko-sensei."

"You're here. Can you wait a bit? I will go get changed." She was pleasantly surprised to see Masashi.

"Take your time."

She returned to a room.

"Your name's Hirota Masashi? Are you close with my sister?"

"Probably, I am her student after all."

"But she had never brought any boys home. You're the first one."

"Oh, is that so." Masashi didn't know how to reply.

Ai studied him seriously. "But you don't look handsome, and so short. Nee-san wouldn't like people like you. I probably thought too much."

Masashi felt a headache. Why do kids today know so much at an early age.

"Hey, do you play games? I bought a new one today. Come over here." Before Masashi could answer, she dragged him over to the

TV and threw him a controller.

Masashi didn't know whether to laugh or cry and started playing with her.

The previous Hirota Masashi was a gamer. Even though he was dead, the memory was still there. It was rare for Ai to find someone that could play so well.

As they were engrossed in the game, Naoko came out. "Masashi, let's go."

He looked at her. Light make up on the face, a light green one piece dress showing her curves, and a pair of stockings on her long legs made them look delicious.

Ai saved the game and yelled. "Nee-san, you're pretty."

Naoko glanced at Masashi and blushed a bit when she noticed he was looking with a sense of appreciation.

"Nee-san, where are you going?"

"Have you forgotten? I told you yesterday that I am having dinner with someone tonight. That's Masashi. I have called sushi for you. It should be here in a bit."

"I don't want sushi. I want to go with you."

"No."

"Why not?"

"Because... just no."

"I want to go." Ai raised her hands in protest.

"Can you please listen?"

"I want to go."

Naoko looked at Masashi in defeat. He spread his hands and said.  
"I don't mind."

The three of them came to a fancy restaurant. The two beauties attracted everyone's eyeballs and the average looking Masashi was ignored.

"I don't like these people, keep staring over." Ai was unhappy being stared at.

"You should be happy. They won't even bother to take a look at people like me." Masashi said lazily.

"That's true." Her expression flipped instantly.

"Masashi, I heard you have a sister, right?" Naoko asked.

"Yes. Hirota Kazumi. She doesn't like to talk but her grades are much better than mine."

"You probably feel lonely because your parents are not home often."

Masashi paused. He never thought of this problem. It didn't matter much to him because he was accustomed to being alone all these years. But what about Kazumi? She was just a teen. Furthermore, she probably didn't have many friends to talk to with that quiet personality of hers. Mom was also alone these years, maybe more lonely than them. I should think of a way to reunite the family.

Naoko glanced at Masashi when he was thinking. This mature expression attracted her.

"Hey, why aren't you two talking?"

"Oh, right. Ai, what do you want to eat?" Naoko was shocked.

"Didn't you just order?"

"Ah, sorry. I forgot."

"Sis, you are weird today."

The waiter brought the dishes and Ai immediately started eating.

"Masashi, would you like a glass of wine? The wine here are quite famous."

Masashi smiled at her. "Sensei, are you sure?"

She remembered that he was still a high school student. How could she had suggested her student to drink alcohol?

Masashi said to the waiter. "Please bring us two glasses of your house wine."

"I also want one." Ai said.

"Not for children."

"What are you talking about? I am in high school just like you." She was angry.

"What? Aren't you a middle schooler?" Masashi acted shocked.

"You... are terrible." Ai gritted her teeth.

Naoko didn't say anything. She looked at Masashi with complex

feelings as she realized she was treating him like a man her age or even more mature. That young face made her feel frightened.

"Ai, it's you." A boy walked over as they were eating.

"Oh, it's Yousuke. You're here also." Ai said with surprise.

"Yeah, what a coincidence. I thought I got the wrong person. When did you come here?" He looked quite excited.

"Not for long."

"I came here with my cousin. These two are?" He looked at Naoko and Masashi.

"She's my sister and this is her student, a not likeable person." Ai was still holding a grudge.

"Ai, that's impolite of you. Hi, Yousuke, I am Ai's sister, Hasebe Naoko. He's Hirota Masashi, my student. Thank you for taking care of Ai." Naoko said with a smile.

"That's too polite of you." Yousuke blushed when he looked at Naoko.

"Yousuke, care to introduce these two beautiful ladies?" A slender and rather handsome man walked over.



"This is Hasabe Ai, my classmate. This is her sister, Naoko-san. And this is Naoko-san's student. Hirota Ma... Ma..."

"Hirota Masashi." Masashi said with a smile.

"Right, Hirota Masashi." Yousuke looked at him gratefully.

"Hello, I am Yousuke's cousin, Hinatsu Junichiro. Glad to meet you." He said with politeness but his eyes were fixed on Naoko.

He had been paying attention to this woman ever since she walked into the restaurant. He originally wanted to find a chance to meet her but his cousin actually knew them. He thought that the gods were on his side.

"Hi, Hinatsu-san." Naoko said.

"Please call me Junichiro. That's what my friends call me." He smiled. He was rather confident with his charm.

However, Naoko didn't have any reaction.

"Would you be interested to come sit with us? Yousuke would be very glad."

"Hinatsu-san, my student is still here, so I won't bother you."

"Is that so? Then I hope to see you again."

After they left, Ai said. "Nee-san, why didn't you go over? Yousuke's cousin looks pretty good. And he seems interested in you. I would go if I were you."

"I won't stop you from going over. Your classmate is there also."

"But he's inviting you."

"Ai-chan, you can't just look at the surface of a person."

"You're preaching again." Ai buried herself in food.

"Masashi, would you like anything else? Don't hold back."

Masashi shook his head. "No, I am almost full."

Naoko drove Masashi back to his house then returned home with Ai.

When Masashi walked past Kazumi's room, she was still studying.

# Chapter 10

---

He wanted to give ReiLi a call but remembered he promised Kazumi to not make any international calls.

Masashi entered a mall and looked around. He went straight to the mobile stall.

"Hello, are you looking to buy a cellphone? We have many of the newest. Please take a look." The sales was pretty enthusiastic.

"Which one's better?"

"What kind of phones are you looking for? This is the newest smartphone with 3G, MP3 capability, camera, internet, and many other functions. And this one is suitable for active people, you can hang it on your ear."

Seeing that Masashi wasn't looking interested, she took out several other.

Masashi was getting drowsy. He waved his hand and said. "Ok, stop. My requirement is simple, as long as it can make a call. Just pick one for me. Also set everything up. I need to make a call now."

"You want me to pick one? That isn't too..."

"Faster, I am in a hurry." Masashi was getting impatient.

"Then.. what about this one? It has..."

"Fine, this one." Masashi interrupted her and handed over a credit card.

The saleswoman's expression changed when she saw the credit card. She knew this was a platinum card from Tokyo bank. She didn't expect this average looking high schooler was so rich, and regretted not picking the most expensive phone.

Masashi didn't know the bank gave him this kind of card. He disliked showing off like a nouveau.

"Hello, who is this?" ReiLi sounded calm.

"Hei, it's me."

"Shishou, didn't expect you to call me so fast. You start to miss me? Told you I should have stayed with you for few more days." In the tone of girl complaining.

Masashi laughed. "Stop the bullshit. I have something I need you to do."

"What is it?" ReiLi turned serious.

"Help me find a person. Nagakawa Kyuujirou from Hokkaido. If

he's still alive, he should be 70 by now."

"Is he an enemy?"

"No, a friend. I owe him something. It's time to return it."

"Ok, I will send people immediately."

"Oh, I bought a new phone. Call this number if you have anything."

It's twenty years already. Hope he's still alive.

The school had returned to normal. News reporters no longer wait at the entrance. People seemed to have forgotten Yamamoto after three months. Masashi was like a regular student and went to school on time. But he was either reading novels in class or sleeping.

One day, he got woke up by loud noises. The students seemed excited.

"What happened?" He asked the girl next to him.

"Didn't you hear? We are going to Okinawa for summer trip."

"When?"

"A day before summer vacation begins. The trip is three days."

Japanese kids had summer and winter vacations and could join this type of trips. But the trip cost 20,000 Yen for each person.

After coming home, Masashi knocked Kazumi's door.

"What's it?"

he handed her 30,000 Yen. "Your class is also going to Okinawa right? This is for the trip."

"Mom give them to you?"

"No, this is from my part time. Don't worry. The money is clean."

"Does mom know?" Kazumi hesitated.

"She doesn't know about me working part time. I have no use for money anyway. I just want to help with her burden. Promise me, don't tell her, ok?"

She looked at him with complex feelings. "Ok, but it's too much."

"This rest is your allowance. You are a girl after all." Masashi smiled and left.

Kazumi stared at his back in a daze.

Two days later, the finals grades came out. Masashi was in the middle of the ranking as he expected. And Kazumi was at the top.

# Chapter 11

---

The next day, Masashi and Kazumi entered the airport and saw the teacher holding a flag like a tour guide.

"Masashi, you're here." Naoko smiled.

"Hello, Naoko-sensei." This was the first time he saw her in a casual attire.

"You're Kazumi? Masashi mentioned you. You have great grades and are very smart."

Kazumi wondered when did he get so close to Naoko-sensei.

The students were loud during the flight. And several pervs kept asking the hostesses to bring them water.

Naoko also had her problems as the male teachers tried to flatter her to tell bad jokes.

While no one was noticing, Naoko left her seat and came to the empty seat next to Masashi.

Seeing he was well asleep, she almost wanted to pinch him.

After settling in a hotel, the teachers brought the students to the dining hall.



"So many foreigners."

"It's a black. The first time I have seen one."

The students quieted down from seeing so many foreigners.

The teachers announced that everyone could go play by the beach, but must gather in front of the hotel at 6pm.

"Look at that foreign woman. So big."

"Baka, that one's big. Like two basketballs."

"Boys are pervs." A girl said.

"All men are like this. Right, Kazumi?"

"Oh." Kazumi replied absent mindedly.

"Kazumi, are you looking for someone?"

"No, just looking around."

Where is him? Can't find him anywhere.

Naoko was looking for Masashi at the same time.

After getting no result from asking around, Naoko was getting worried.

"I will give him a lesson if I ever see that brat again. How could he ask what insecticide I was using. It makes me rage."

"Why did you bother trying to pick up a brat. So many handsome guys here."

"It's not a pick up. I was just trying to tease him since he looked like he didn't give a fuck about anyone."

"Alright, alright. Let's go find a good man."

Two girls in bikini walked by.

Naoko's eyes lit up and walked to where they came from.

She found Masashi sitting on a big rock by the ocean with a campfire in front. Several fish were roasting on the fire.

Naoko calmed down as soon as he saw Masashi.

# Chapter 12

---

She tip toed over but when she was still ten meters away, Masashi turned around.

"Oh, it's Naoko-sensei."

"Didn't expect you to hide here. You made me look all over."

"Looking for me? Anything you want?"

"Do I have to need something to look for you?"

Masashi laughed. "Want to try? Just caught these fish and they taste pretty good." He handed over a fish on a stick.

"Can you really eat them like this?"

"This is the most authentic beach style." He took a bite.

"You brought alcohol?" After a few bites, Masashi took out a bottle of spirit.

"How can you have meat and not alcohol?"

Chinese baijiu were like day and night from Japanese sake.

"Where did you get the alcohol?"

"Bought them in the hotel. Sensei, you want a glass?"

"That's over your boundary. You're still a high schooler. How can you drink? And it's spirit." She had forgotten about the dinner.

Masashi laughed. "High schoolers nowadays don't have much interest in drinking anymore. Do you know how many are acting in red light districts? And how many sell compensated dates in Shibuya?"

Tokyo was a highly developed city and also very easy for someone to lose themselves.

"Don't forget about Yamamoto and his friends are also high schoolers."

Naoko had no words in reply. "Not everyone is like this. At least, there are still many nice people in the world."

"Whatever, enough of this. We should enjoy this amazing scenery. This isn't school, so just pretend you don't see it."

Perhaps due to the alcohol, Masashi had a strange impulse when he looked at Naoko. He cursed himself for getting out of his mind.

Naoko didn't stop him anymore and just watched as he drank.

"Sensei, want to try some sea urchins?"

"Uh, ok."

Masashi opened up the urchin and poured some water on it.

"Just like this? Aren't you going to cook it?"

"This is the best way. Try it."

Naoko tried it with a little hesitation. It was a little fishy at first then an amazing flavor filled her mouth.

Masashi smiled. "Want more?"

Naoko nodded lightly.

The two of them walked over to the shallow water area. Masashi taught her to catch fish. Naoko felt like she had returned to her childhood.

After dinner, the students went out to the streets in groups.

Masashi didn't have such habit so he returned to his room to train. However, someone knocked on the door.

"Sensei, what's it?"

"Can you take a walk with me?"

"But I am sleeping." Masashi yawned.

"It's only 7pm. How can a young man be so lazy. Hurry up."

"But I am really sleepy. Can I not go?"

"Fine, just let a girl walk the dark streets alone. I heard other than some occasional robberies and murders, the safety in Okinawa is pretty good. Masashi, go sleep. I won't blame you if anything happens."

"Sensei, can you wait a bit? I need to get changed." Masashi sighed.

"What do you change for? Are you going to sleep?"

"Sensei, I am really going to sleep if you continue."

Naoko laughed in a smirk.

The two of them came to the most crowded street.

"There seems to be a performance in front. Let's go take a look."

Naoko dragged Masashi over.

Performers were singing and dancing in exotic clothes and instruments. The audiences also clapped their hands with the rhythm.

Naoko listened for a bit and couldn't make out what they were singing. "Do you know what they are singing?"

"They are singing in their local dialect. I also don't understand it."

"Perhaps this is uchina pop. I heard this is the traditional dances of Okinawa, but this is the first time I have seen it."

"It is uchina pop. The instrument with three strings is shamisen and that drum is taiko."

"How do you know these?"

"A friend once told me."

"Your friend is from Okinawa?"

"No, he's from Hokkaido, but he likes to travel. So he had seen this performance."

Naoko felt that Masashi looked a little down when he mentioned this friend.

"Let's go, I will treat you a cup of coffee."

"You can get coffee anywhere. We should take a look at the handcraft shops."



# Chapter 13

---

Naoko stroke the doll excitedly after coming out of the shop.

"How come I don't see anything fun about this thing?"

"Don't you feel it looks kawaii? It looks just like you."

"You're kidding. Which part of me looks like it."

"Don't you think your facial expressions are similar? You look just like the doll when you don't laugh."

Masashi never knew that dolls had expressions.

Suddenly, a figure ran pass them followed by a yell. "Robbery, help..." A fat woman was panting as she ran.

It's just robbery, not taking your meat.

"Masashi, what should we do?" Naoko looked at him nervously.

What does this have to do with me? He sighed when he looked at her eyes and walked over to the vending machine.

"Borrow me." He grabbed a can of unopened soda from a girl in front of the machine, then threw it at the robber.

The dude fell to the ground like a dead pig without even a scream.

"Sensei, let's go." Masashi grabbed Naoko's hand and silently walked away.

"But what if that person has a weapon? That woman's in danger."

"He's knocked out."

"Really?"

Masashi nodded. Even though it was dark but that was not a problem for the trained. He aimed it at the back of the robber's head and should knock him out for two to three days. The after effects were not his problem.

When he walked pass the girl, Masashi threw her a 100 Yen coin.

"For your soda."

The teachers organized the students to visit various attractions in Okinawa the next two days.

Masashi had no interest in the streets or aquariums. However, he tended to stand in places like Tamaudun, Shureimon, and Shuri Castle for half a day a time.

"Masashi, what's wrong? Are you not feeling well?" Naoko had been paying attention to him when he was standing absent minded.

"I am fine."

"Why are your hands so cold?" She touched his forehead.

Masashi felt a little warmth in his heart.

"I am really fine. Thank you, sensei."

"I will accompany you back to the hotel. You should take a rest."

"No, let's go."

Suddenly, they heard a series of barking.

"Sorry, it's my phone." Masashi was a little embarrassed.

Naoko laughed. It was the first time she saw this kind of expression from him.

"Is it Hei?"

"Yes, shishou."

"What's it?"

"I found the person."

Masashi took a breath. "Is he dead?"

"Yes, Nagakawa Kyuujirou died five years ago, in his home in Hokkaido."

"How did he die?"

"Heart attack. We checked the hospital records, nothing suspicious."

"Good people don't live long." Masashi smiled bitterly.

ReiLi knew the weight of old friends to his shishou.

"Does he have families?"

"Two sons. One is a sheriff and one is a manager in a small business. Two grandsons and a granddaughter still in school."

"See if they have any difficulties. Help them if they do. Give me his address later, I need to visit Hokkaido once."

"Ok, shishou. Take care."

Masashi stood there silently after hanging up.

"What's wrong?" Naoko held his hand.

"I am fine."

"It's ok if you don't want to say. I just want you to know there are people who care about you."

"Thank you, sensei. Please let the teachers know I am going back to the hotel."

"I will go with you."

"No, it's your first time in Okinawa, you should have fun." He walked away without waiting for a reply.

Naoko sighed as she stared at his back. "Baka, how can I have fun if you are not here."

The three day trip ended quickly.

During the return, everyone carried bags of souvenirs like a refugee.

Masashi was the only one that left the way he came.

When everyone was chatting about their trip, Naoko kept her eyes on Masashi. He hadn't smiled after taking that call.

What happened to him?

Back at school. Naoko found Masashi and slipped a piece of paper into his hand and said in a low voice. "If you need any help or someone to talk, just call me. It is my home number."

Masashi paused and just realized she was worrying about him the whole time.

"Thank you." He looked at this kind hearted woman gently.

# Chapter 14

---

Masashi began the ride to Hokkaido after three days of resting at home.

The air outside New Chitose Airport wasn't hot and humid like he thought. It was rather refreshing.

Hokkaido was more comfortable than Tokyo. The average day temperature was around 20C even during the hottest months of July and August.

It was already 4pm after settling in a hotel. Masashi stood in front of the windows and looked down at the city.

The next day, he went to the address ReiLi gave him, and finally found the Nagakawa house after asking around.

Masashi doubted he might have gotten the wrong place, since it was dojou. However, the house plates read Yagyu Dojou confirmed this was Nagakawa's home since he belonged to the Yagyuu faction.

A teenage boy in kendo uniform opened the door.

“How can I help you?”

“I am looking for Nagakawa Kenichi-san.”

“My apologies, Kenichi san is not here.”

“What about Kenji-san?”

“He’s not here either.”

“Who’s in charge currently?”

“The master of this dojou is Minoru Watanabe-san.”

“Is he Nagakawa Kyuujirou’s disciple?”

The boy was unhappy that he called Nagakawa Kyuujirou by name. “Minoru-sensei was Nagakawa-san’s first student. What else do you need?”

“Good, I want to see him.”

“Minoru-sensei probably doesn’t have time to see you right now. Please come back next time.”

“Go tell him that Nagakawa Kyuujirou’s old friend sent someone to find him and he will see me.”

“You really know Nagakawa-san?” The boy doubted.



“Just relay these words to Minoru Watanabe.” Masashi was getting impatient.

The boy hesitated for a bit then went back in.

After a while, a middle age man came back with the boy.

“You are the first student of Nagakawa Kyuujirou, Minoru Watanabe?” Masashi studied him carefully.

Watanabe frowned. “I am. How can I help you?”

“I... My shishou is an old friend of Nagakawa. He left an item at my shishou and I am here to return it to the descendants of Nagakawa.”

“Can I have the name of your shishou?”

“Rei Yin.”

“What!? Your shishou is Rei Yin senpai?” Watanabe was shocked.

Masashi nodded.

“Please come in.” Watanabe immediately invited Masashi into the dojou.

The boy looked in surprise since he had never seen his sensei giving so much respect.

In the parlor, Watanabe prepared tea for Masashi.

This large man actually had good tea making technique. “Your technique is almost at the level of your master.”

“Sensei once said that the art of sword is the art of tea. However, I still don’t understand what he meant to this day.”

“That’s because you treat the art of sword as one to kill. Is the art of tea really just to prepare a cup of tea?” Masashi said calmly.

Watanabe was shocked and felt enlightened. “Thank you for your teaching. I will never forget.”

A girl in white uniform walked in.

“Watanabe nii-san. Are you looking for me?”

“Rumi, come over.”

Watanabe said to Masashi. “Hirota-san. This is sensei’s granddaughter, Nagakawa Rumi, and also the heir to this dojo.”

Then he said to the girl. “Rumi, this is Rei Yin senpai’s disciple,

Hirota Masashi-san.”

“The disciple of Rei Yin senpai?” She looked at Masashi in surprise.

“Hello, can you take me to your grandfather’s spirit tablet?” Masashi looked at the descendant of his old friend gently.

“Please, please this way.”

Masashi stared at the portrait quietly in this large room.

“Can you let me sit here alone for a while?”

Watanabe and Rumi silently left the room.

“Nagakawa, do you still remember me? I am Rei Yin.” He said to the portrait.

“You probably won’t believe it but I am really Rei Yin. Thought I am called Hirota Masashi now.”

“It’s funny right? But I can’t help it either.”

“We were both acting without consideration back then. Even though I found that you changed your name to Nagakawa, but knowing that you did so to avoid me, I didn’t come see you again.”

“Anyway, it’s been so many years and you are gone now, let the past be the past. Do you still remember the ‘Nine Souls’ you left to me? I am here to return it to your family today. You probably want to see it also after parting for so long.” Masashi opened the box he was carrying. He placed the katana in front of the spirit tablet.

“Old friend, sometimes I envy that you can leave so peacefully. Perhaps the next time I see you will be several hundred years later.” Masashi smiled bitterly.

“I have seen your disciple and granddaughter, you have people that can inherit you. Do you still remember Hei? That brat that I had to give a beating frequently. He has grown to an adult but is still stupid. Changan is still wearing a white shirt year round and rarely says anything. Hoho, I seem to be getting old, talking like a housewife. But who else can I say these words to?”

“There’s something I wanted to tell you but never did so back then.”

He paused then said in a low voice. “Sorry, but if time rewinds, I will still do the same thing. I still feel that I owe you. If there is a second life, then you can give me a beating next time you see me.”

# Chapter 15

---

“Nagakawa Rumi, come over here.” Masashi said in a serious tone.

“This is the katana your grandfather left to my shishou back then, ‘Nine Souls’. Since Nagakawa is not here anymore, I am handing it over to you. Please take good care of it.”

Rumi opened the box and stared at the katana.

Masashi walked over to Watanabe and handed him a piece of paper. “This is my contact information. Let me know if you have any problem. I will do what I can to help.”

“I understand.”

“Hirota-san. I have a request.” Rumi suddenly said.

“Say it.”

“I wish to have a match with you. Grandfather said that he could never surpass Rei Yin senpai in his life. I want to have a match with Rei Yin senpai’s disciple in his place.”

“Ok.” Masashi nodded.

“Please follow me.” Rumi brought him to the training lobby.

The students emptied the place since it was rare to see an outsider competing.

“This is your kendo armor and bamboo sword.”

Masashi took the sword but not the armor.

“I don’t wear this kind of things.”

The audiences were enraged.

“Who’s this brat, acting so full of himself.”

“Let me give him a lesson.”

“All of you shut up.” Watanabe shouted.

Masashi said to Rumi who was biting her lips. “I am not looking down at you, but I am just not used to wearing this thing. It will obstruct my actions if I have to wear it.”

“Even though it’s just a bamboo sword, but you will still get injured if you get hit.” Rumi calmed down after hearing his explanation.

“Give it a try first, ok?” Masashi smiled.

Rumi clenched her teeth. “To be fair, I also won’t wear armors then.”

“I couldn’t use any force if you don’t wear armors. What’s the point of the match then.” Masashi frowned.

Everyone felt that Masashi suddenly changed. He was exerting an indescribable pressure.

Rumi looked at Watanabe and saw him nodded.

“Yoroshiku onegaishimasu.” She bowed and went into a stance.

Masashi nodded and stood there casually.

This person was giving her a profound feeling. If it wasn’t for that face, she couldn’t believe he was a high school student.

After a long standoff, Rumi finally moved.

When the sword was inches away from his head, she got nervous. Maybe he couldn’t dodge?

Then suddenly, she felt an impact on her chest then flew backward.

“Ah!” Everyone cried in disbelief.

No one saw how he swung the sword. Everything just happened in an instant.

Watanabe helped Rumi up. She was also in disbelief when she took off her helmet.

“Are you alright? Do you want to try again?” Masashi looked at her.

“Yes, of course.” Rumi looked excited.

“Yoroshiku onegaishimasu.” She immediately stabbed at his throat.

Masashi casually blocked the sword then countered from a weird angle.

Pah! The sword dropped from Rumi’s hand.

She stared at her right hand that got hit and said. “I lost.”

“Pick up your sword.” Masashi said calmly.

“Yes.” Rumi started another round of attacks.



The students were engrossed as the match went on.

They had never seen this kind of kendo. Every hit looked so casual yet the movements were so smooth and aimed at critical spots.

No matter how much Rumi tried to defend, she would get hit within two or three attacks.

Masashi's attacks were not fast like the first one. It was like he was instructing Rumi.

After a long time, Rumi could no longer hold it and dropped to the floor in one knee.

"Do you want to continue?" Masashi helped her up.

She took off the helmet with her shaking hands and said. "Thank you for your guidance."

"Very good, you live up as Nagakawa's granddaughter." Masashi smiled.

"That's too flattering." Rumi blushed.

"I am saying the truth. It's not easy to reach this level with your age."

Everyone felt a shiver. Then what about you?

However, Rumi felt happy hearing that.

“Anyone else want to try?” Masashi suddenly felt interested.

But no one said anything. Even though Rumi was still young, she was trained by the old Nagakawa from a young age. No one other than Watanabe could match her in this dojo.

Noticing that Watanabe wanted to say something, Masashi gestured him to stop.

After coming out of the lobby, he said. “If you want a match, we will have it tonight.”

Watanabe knew his intention. He didn’t want to have a match in front of the students, since losing will drop his reputation.

He looked at Masashi gratefully. He knew that he had no chance in winning.

# Chapter 16

---

After dinner, the three of them came back to the lobby.

All the students left and the servants were also sent away.

“Hirota-san. Are you sure you don’t need armors?” Watanabe asked again.

“My reason is the same as in the afternoon. It’s not looking down at my opponent. Let us get started.”

Watanabe didn’t insist. He bowed and held the sword with a serious expression.

Rumi was also looking at the two of them in excitement. She didn’t want to miss anything.

Watanabe felt that Masashi changed. It was like he couldn’t sense his existence.

This was a strange feeling. He could see Masashi standing there but couldn’t sense anything human in front.

Is he a spirit? Watanabe thought.

There was no use waiting. He shouted then charged at Masashi.

The sword approached him in slow motion in Masashi's eyes. He could see every detail of his opponent, the breathing, compression of muscles, enlargement of the pupils...

Wu-dao was something to keep him sane in his endless life.

Masashi himself didn't know how strong he became after a thousand years of accumulation.

He never fought to his full extent because there was no opponent.

In some sense, it was unfair for him to have any match, unless the other person is in the same condition as him.

At this stage of wu-dao, breakthrough in the mental states was more important than the physical body. He merged himself with the environment so Watanabe couldn't sense his existence. He could grasp everything happening around him at this state.

When the sword was only a few inches away, Masashi moved.

Watanabe felt that he saw a flash of light then he flew back.

For a moment, he was in disbelief. Rumi was also shocked and finally knew how she was defeated in the first round.

It was too fast. She couldn't see anything. The sword was like

there the whole time and Watanabe ran up to it himself.

This kind of technique was beyond human knowledge. Rumi finally understood what his grandfather said by unable to surpass.

“Hirota-san, I lost.” Watanabe said respectfully.

“Not trying anymore?”

“There’s no need. I am thankful that you showed me kendo can reach such a level. There’s no regret in my life.”

“Don’t talk like you are an old man. You’re still in your forties.” Masashi smiled bitterly. It seemed like he went overboard.

“I can’t imagine Rei Yin senpai’s state when you are already so powerful.”

“What state can he be in, that old man died ten years ago.”

“What? Rei Yin senpai had already left?”

“I never told you?”

Watanabe and Rumi shook their heads.

“Oh, sorry. I accidentally forgot.”

# Chapter 17

---

When he reached home, he saw a man looking around by the door.

Sales? Upon taking a closer look at the man's face, a name appeared in Masashi's head.

"Father?" It felt awkward saying this noun again after several hundred years.

"It's Masashi, you're finally back." Hirota Katsutoshi was delighted.

"When did you come here?"

"This morning, but no one answered the door."

"Kazumi should be doing grocery at this time. Come on in first."

Masashi poured a cup of tea for him then turned on the TV.

"I heard that you had to stay in the hospital for an injury, is that true?"

"Yes, but that was the past. I am very well now."

"I am really sorry. I was out of the country for business at the time. I only learned of this when I came back." Katsutoshi looked apologetic.

"There's no need to mention it. What are you here for today?"

"Nothing special. I got a few days off from work so I came over to see you. Are you doing well?"

"Kazumi and I are doing well. Thank you." Masashi said calmly.

It was difficult for him to have any feelings for a stranger. Their conversation was polite but had no warmth.

Just then, he heard the turning of the door. Masashi knew that Kazumi was back.

The door opened and Kazumi came in with a bag of items.

"Kazumi, father is here to see us." Masashi said to her.

Kazumi's face turned pale as soon as she saw Katsutoshi on the sofa.

"Long time no see, Kazumi. How are you doing?" Katsutoshi said with a smile.

"Get out! Get out of here now." Kazumi sounded extremely angry.

"Kazumi, how can you speak like that. He's our father." Even though Masashi had no feelings for this father but that was too much.

"Kazumi, I..."

"I told you to get out, didn't you hear?" Kazumi yelled then threw her bag at him.

Masashi was shocked. He had never seen her in such a state.

Is this the same Kazumi that was normally quiet and indifferent?

"It looks like I should leave." Katsutoshi walked to the door.

Masashi followed him out.

Katsutoshi sighed and said. "It looks like Kazumi still haven't forgiven me for leaving you. But, what else could I have done."

Masashi felt something strange but he didn't think much of it. "I think Kazumi just can't accept it for now. I will talk to her after she calms down."

"Thank you, Masashi. You really grew up. I will stay in a hotel



nearby these few days. Give me a call if something happens."

Masashi nodded.

After he returned inside, Kazumi's doors were shut.

He had to order take out for lunch then.

After lunch, he told her through the door that food was left in the kitchen, but there was no reply.

Let her calm down by herself. Masashi thought.

He didn't know where to go as he walked on the street. Too bad that Hei and Changan were in the U.S. or they could have gone out for a drink together.

Something suddenly came to his mind and he entered a bookstore.

"Hello, how can I help you?" The receptionist asked politely.

"Do you have any books on stock investment?"

"Yes, please follow me."

Masashi followed her to a corner full of books on investment.

He randomly picked about ten books and entered the reading room.

Masashi adjusted his breathing then began flipping through the books. His speed was increasing by the second and before long, he finished a book and went on to the next one.

The book became printed in his mind. It was an ability he discovered when he was bored.

When he adjusted his mental state and focus on reading, he could memorize all the words and pictures vividly.

Soon, the whole stack of books were finished printing. Masashi went on to take another stack of books. He finished all the books on investment in just three hours.

After organizing the information in his head, he came to a conclusion about all these analysis theories and techniques, complete bullshit.

The spread of internet gave consumers a lot more choices, but the core of investment didn't change. Many of these so called new techniques were just lies.

It was better to just research a company's condition, assets, and debts.

# Chapter 18

---

But where can he get these information? He could give a call to Sakura Mion but he didn't want to get in contact with the gang.

Then he saw an entertainment mall and an idea came to his mind.

Following the memories of the previous Hirota Masashi, he opened up the webpages and quickly researched a lot of information on listed companies.

Since there were so many publicly traded companies in Japan, he only researched a small portion by dinner. The whole thing would take a week.

Fortunately, it was summer vacation so there was a ton of time.

Kazumi was making dinner when he returned home. She looked as indifferent as always, like nothing had happened.

After dinner, Masashi entered the kitchen and talked to her. "Kazumi, I want to have a talk with you."

"If it's about that person, then don't bother me."

"Kazumi, he's your father."

"I don't have this kind of father." She bit her lips and she was shaking.

"Tell me, what really happened?" Masashi felt it was not as simple as he thought.

"None of your concern." She calmed down and went back to her room.

Masashi continued the research for the next several days. He couldn't think of a way to deal with Kazumi so he had to wait for mom to come back and ask.

One afternoon, he saw Hirota Katsutoshi backing out of the house as he returned home.

Kazumi charged out after him, holding a knife.

Masashi almost doubted his vision. He couldn't have imagined a girl like Kazumi would do something like this.

There was no time to think. He ran over and grabbed his sister.

"Let go of me. Let go of me..." Kazumi struggled.

Masashi couldn't take it and slapped her.

"You're all scumbags!" She ran back inside holding onto her cheek.

"Masashi, I..."

"Can you leave first? It's not the time to talk." Masashi was feeling annoyed.

"Fine, we will talk after a day or two." Katsutoshi left.

Upon entering the house, the floor was ravaged and full of broken items.

"Kazumi, can we talk?" Masashi walked to her room.

However, there was no reply coming through the door. He had to give up after a while.

Things were definitely more complex. He took out the address Katsutoshi gave him a few days ago.

9PM. Masashi arrived at the hotel Katsutoshi was residing in. The receptionist told him that Katsutoshi hadn't been back yet.

"Do you know what time he usually comes back?"

"I am sorry, but we don't know."

"Are there any bars nearby?" Masashi remembered the smell of alcohol on Katsutoshi.

"There are three bars nearby. The closest one is only 400 meters away. You should see it if you take a right and walk straight."

"Thank you."

After a bit of walking, he saw the bar.

The inside was dimly lit. Figures were twisting their bodies along with the screeching metal music.

A girl in translucent underwear and bra were dancing around a pole in the center stage.

The atmosphere reminded him of an animal farm.

"Nii-san, first time here?" A bunny girl walked over.

"Have you seen a man in a suit, wearing a gold colored frame glasses, about forty years old?"

"There are so many men like this here. Buy me a drink and we will go look for him one by one, ok?" She thought Masashi was being shy.

"I am not here for sex. Help me find this man and the money is yours." Masashi slapped 10,000 Yen on the table.

"Wait here for a bit, I will go ask other people." Bunny girl immediately ran off.

By the time Masashi was on his third glass of alcohol, she came back.

"There's a man that looks like your description. I can bring you over but you can only peep through the door. I will be in trouble if you anger a customer." Bunny girl stared at the money on his hand.

Masashi finished the glass then stood up. "Let's go."

Bunny girl brought him to a room then lightly opened the door.

He could hear a man and woman's laughter and knew he found the right person. Masashi pushed open the door at once.

"Ah. Who are you? Who let you in?" The woman sitting on Katsutoshi's lap screamed.

"What, what happened?" Katsutoshi asked drunkenly.

"How can you be like this. Didn't I tell you not to interrupt

them?" Bunny girl yelled.

"So it's you, Yoko. I will tell the manager."

"No, Haruko. I don't know this brat. I..."

"The two of you shut up. I know this man. I am here to bring him away." Masashi carried Katsutoshi up.

"No, he's my client. How can I let you take him away like this."

Then she stopped talking after Masashi threw her 20,000 Yen.



# Chapter 19

---

Katsutoshi threw up twice on the way back to the hotel. Masashi would have thrown him on the streets if he wasn't their father.

Katsutoshi came to his senses for a bit after Masashi put a warm towel on his face.

"Who... are you? I seem to have seen you before."

Masashi laughed coldly. Such a good father that couldn't even recognize his son.

"Did you forget? I bought you a drink in the bar."

"Oh, is that so. Thank you. You are a nice person."

"There seems to be something troubling you. Want to talk to someone?"

"How... can I.. have anything... troubling... I am so happy... Haha..." Katsutoshi laughed.

"So there's really something troubling. You can try and say it out. It will make you feel better."

"Real...really?"

"Yes, of course. Because I have tried it. Just say it and you will feel better." Masashi slowed down his tone.

"But...but I can't... say it." Katsutoshi was struggling.

"Why not. Just say it. You will no longer feel troubled. There is no one else here. No one will hear what you said." His voice sounded charming.

"But..."

"Don't worry. No one will hear it."

"I... I deeply regret..."

"Right, continue. Slowly."

"I... I did something sorry to my... daughter... My wife separated with me because of this..."

After half an hour of broken description, Masashi learned the truth from this man.

For a moment, he wanted to kill him.

"I... I really didn't want to. I didn't... I don't know what happened

to me on that day. I really didn't want to..." He kept repeating this line.

Masashi smiled coldly as he looked at the man. "Don't worry. I will help you atone for the sin."

Kazumi looked at the clock after she woke up. It was already 2AM. She fell asleep during her crying.

After she left the room, she saw the living room had been cleaned and a note on the table. "There's food in the kitchen."

Kazumi felt a bit of warmth within.

I said something terrible to him today. She felt a little bad and ran to Masashi's room. Then she heard a voice through the door.

"Is it Akamatsu Ryuichiro? I am Masashi."

"I want you to take care of a person, Hirota Katsutoshi. Male, in his forties. Go search for the rest of his details yourself."

"Don't kill him. Don't beat him. I just want you to castrate him. I want him to become the last eunuch of Japan. Don't leave any traces, I don't want any trouble."

"Thank you in advance." Masashi hung up the phone.

Kazumi's heart was beating very fast as she heard it. She had never seen this side of Masashi. And it looked like he had already learned of everything. Did mom tell him?

Then he heard Masashi made another call.

"Mom? I am Masashi. Sorry to bother you so late."

"Mom, let's divorce that man. Japanese law allows a couple to divorce after living apart for two years."

"Mom, don't lie. I know everything."

A long moment of silence.

"Don't worry. That beast didn't come to us. Kazumi told me."

"Mom, don't cry. I will take good care of Kazumi. I won't let her get hurt again."

"We will use your surname after the divorce. I don't want that man's name."

"Mom, we will be by your side no matter what happens."

"Take care. I know, we will take good care of ourselves."

"I am hanging up. Bye."

The room was silent again.

After some hesitation, Kazumi knocked on the door.

"Come in."

"Kazumi, you are still awake so late?"

Kazumi didn't respond and just looked at him.

"You must be hungry. I will go reheat the food." Masashi thought she was still angry.

Kazumi suddenly ran over and hugged him, then buried her head in his chest and began crying.

Masashi didn't say anything and just stroke her hair.

"Thank you, nii-san."

This was the first time Masashi heard her call him by this. He smiled. "Baka, you're my sister. You should be hungry. Let's go eat first, ok?"

She nodded.

Masashi went to the kitchen and reheated the food. Kazumi stood behind him quietly and watched.

# Chapter 20

---

Whether the students like it or not, summer vacation was finally over.

Something that had to be mentioned was Naoko sensei who had only become a teacher for half a year suddenly resigned and left the school. There were many versions of the reason for her resignation. Some thought she went home to marry, some thought she changed jobs, and some even thought she ran away with a man. For a while, the male teachers who were aiming for her felt really down and didn't have any energy for work.

Masashi was also puzzled by her leaving since she never said a word about it. Then he decided to take a look at her in a few days.

Looking at all the younger faces in the welcoming ceremony, everyone realized they had become senpais.

"Do you see that girl? Looks pretty good, and has a great body. I wonder what's her name."

"I think that one is prettier, the one with long hair."

"That boy is cute."

"Go away, you are two years older than him."

"Freshmen these days sure develop nicely. I've decided. That girl is mine. Don't fight with me."

"Who gives a shit about you. I've decided on her."

Second and third year students usually fought for beautiful freshman girls were each year. Especially guys who still had no girlfriends.

During class, the teacher called their names one by one. When he got to Masashi, he stood up. "Teacher, I have changed my name. I am now Gennai Masashi. Please don't mistake it again. Thank you."

"Ok, Gennai-kun." The teacher felt a bit awkward.

The others started talking about him but he continued reading novel like he didn't hear them.

After class, someone was looking for him.

Is it Kazumi? He went to the entrance of the classroom and saw a girl in a new school uniform instead.

The girl bowed respectfully when she saw Masashi. "Hello, Hirota-san."

"Who are you?" Masashi thought she looked familiar but couldn't



remember.

"Have you forgotten? I am Nagakawa Rumi, the granddaughter of Nagakawa Kyuujirou."

"What? You're Rumi?" He stared at her face and found them to look very alike.

She was wearing kendo uniform and wrapped her hair to a bun like a boy when he last saw her. The pink colored skirt of the school uniform and putting down her hair made her appear delicate and at the same time strong willed. Plus, her face was very fair to begin with, which attracted most of the boys to peep at her.

"I am sorry. I couldn't recognize you at once. Didn't you go to school in Hokkaido? Why are you here?"

"Because I want to stay beside Hirota-san to learn kendo from you. After asking for permission from my father, I transferred here." She bowed again.

"Is that so? You are coming here by yourself?"

"Yes. Father believed this is an opportunity to train myself. So no one else came with me."

"It's hard for a girl to go so far away by yourself. You can come find me any time you feel like. I have the responsibility to take care of you since you are Nagakawa's granddaughter."

"Thank you, Hirota-san."

"Oh, and I changed my surname. I am now Gennai Masashi. Please don't call me Hirota again. And don't add san. Just call me by my name."

"That would be impolite. Can I call you senpai?"

"Whatever. Where do you live now?"

"I rented a house in Go-Chome. This is the address." She handed Masashi a hand drawn map.

"Good, not far from my house. Come have dinner at my house tonight. I will also show you the way to my house. Wait for me after school for a bit."

"I will be bothering you tonight then."

"Don't talk with honorifics. I am only a year older than you. People will find it weird."

Rumi giggled.

After returning to the classroom, the boys surrounded Masashi.

"Masashi, is that your girlfriend?"

"No, just a friend."

"Really?"

"Yes." Masashi yawned.

"Are you close to her? Can you introduce me to her?"

"No, Masashi, introduce me to her. I still don't have a girlfriend. I beg you."

"Go away. You will just scare her with that face of yours."

"You think you're handsome? You look just like a perv."

"Masashi, can you tell me her name?"

"You don't even know her name? She's Nagakawa Rumi, the most popular girl among the freshmen. She's also a kendo bishoujo. You can give up now."

Masashi ignored these guys and napped on the desk.

Kazumi came over in the afternoon break with bentos.

"Nii-san, this is your bento. I made your favorite shrimp tempura. Do you like takoyaki tomorrow?"

"Sure, I like anything you make."

"Really?" Kazumi seemed very happy.

"Of course. Oh, yeah, I will bring a friend home for dinner tonight. Make some preparations."

"Boy or girl?" Kazumi was bewildered. Masashi had never brought any friends home before.

"A girl."

"Oh. Is that so. I understand." She gave him a weird smile.

"What are you thinking, you little girl. She's just a normal friend. She came here to go to school alone, so I have to take care of her." Masashi knocked her head with a finger.

# Chapter 21 - Another Sister

---

Watching the back of Kazumi, Masashi showed a warm smile.

Since that day, Kazumi began to increasingly dependent on Masashi and her expression became more lively. Occasionally, she would act like a spoiled child. Another time, she would crack a joke. But that change only happen in front of Masashi. In the eyes of others, her expression was still cold and detached.

However, this is a very good start. Masashi believes she will one day opened her mind to freely talk and laugh like a normal girl.

“Oh, it seems like your siblings’ relationship are superb.” When Masashi was having lunch, a voice came from the side.

When Masashi turned to look, it was Mizato Kazuo.

Masashi didn’t want to talk to him, so, he lowered his head and continued to eat.

Seeing Masashi just ignored him, Mizato Kazuo became angry.

Six months ago, when Masashi chased after a robber and was hailed as a hero, his heart was getting a little unbalanced. He could not accept such a nobody like Masashi became the center of attention.

And now, after knowing that Nagakawa Rumi came looking for Masashi, there is a hate and jealousy toward Masashi in his heart. Though Masashi told others that he and Nagakawa Rumi were just friends, that Kendo girl's manner was extremely respectful toward Masashi, and anyone can see that their relationship is not simple.

“Hirota Masashi, no, it should be Gennai Masashi. Can you tell me how you train your sister to be so well-behaved?” Mizato Kazuo wretchedly smiled. He also specifically accentuated the word “train.”

As soon as he finished, he suddenly saw Masashi, as if appeared out of nowhere, stood before him and then, a hand suddenly grabbed him by the collar. “Bang!” His whole body was pushed against the wall. Mizato Kazuo's pain made him unable to speak. As if being downed by hundreds of pounds of heavy objects in the chest, he has difficulty in breathing.

“I'm warning you, don't make fun of my sister.” Like trading off a new personality, Masashi oozed out a suffocating murderous aura from all over his body.

For the first time, seeing the look in Masashi's eyes, Mizato Kazuo unexpectedly unable to control his legs.

After Masashi had loosened his collar, Mizato Kazuo's legs became weak, and his whole body fell to the ground.

“Leave.” Masashi's word was like a cold that penetrated into the bone.

Mizato Kazuo, as if he had seen a ghost, stumbled from the ground to get out of the classroom.

When everyone was looking at Masashi with an appalled look, Masashi, as if nothing happened, returned to his seat and continued to eat his lunch.

After school, Masashi found that Rumi was waiting for him at the school gate.

Masashi introduced her and his sister, “Rumi, this is my sister Gennai Kazumi, and she is the friend from Hokkaido that I told you about, Nagakawa Rumi. She now attended this high school. Since she is a first grader, she can be considered as your junior.”

“Hello, miss Gennai, please give advise to this junior.” Rumi bowed and greeted Kazumi.

“You’re called Rumi, right? Please give me advise. Later on, you can just call me Kazumi.” Kazumi returned the courtesy.

“Enough, you two, stop with the bowing. Let’s go back. The sky is almost dark.” Masashi, who stood by the side, unable to put up with it longer.

Kazumi suddenly approached him and whispered, “Brother, are you going to swindle this pretty girl?”

“You, this fellow!” Masashi scoffed and knocked her on the head.

“You always bully other people, hateful.” The present Kazumi was like a 16-year-old teenage girl.

When they arrived at home, Kazumi started to prepare the food. Rumi immediately insisted on helping her. Without any better option, Kazumi allowed her to help.

Perhaps because Rumi was clever and straightforward, Kazumi unexpectedly got along well with her, not like the usual cold treatment that she gave to a stranger. The two girls were laughing in the kitchen, busy and happy.

After the meal, before Kazumi even move, Rumi, on her own initiative, started to clean up the dishes. Kazumi has no other choice but to cut the fruit.

“Although I don’t want to say it, this girl is really good. Merely I still can’t reconcile that my brother is not my own anymore.” Kazumi said with a faint smile.

“She is not who you think she is. She is the granddaughter of one of my elders. In order to practice Kendo, she came here alone from Hokkaido. You should also be able to see that she is actually a very simple girl. Thereafter, you will have to help take care of her, ok?”

“Um, I know. Actually, I also like her.” Kazumi knew that Masashi has a lot of secrets. Therefore, she did not ask Masashi



about who that elder is. As long as she knows that Masashi is sincere toward her, she couldn't care less about his secrets.

When the time at Masashi's house reached 09:00 PM, Rumi wanted to go back. Thus, Masashi will naturally send her home.

After walking for about ten minutes or so, they have arrived at Rumi's place. Masashi took a look at the surrounding environment. The lights and the people were abundant enough, so, security should not be a problem.

"Senior, thank you for sending me back, and thank you for your hospitality." Before entering the house, Rumi gave her thanks to Masashi.

"You, were too overly courteous. Later on, you should visit my house often, it was hard to come by for Kazumi to also like you."

"I know, senior. Do you want to come in and sit? I'll make you a cup of tea."

"Next time; I want to sleep early. If somethings happen, remember to give me a call."

"Good night, senior."

After saying his farewell with Rumi, Masashi took a moonlight walk back to home.

After few days in a row, Masashi, taking advantage of the holiday on Sunday, came to visit teacher Naoko's apartment.

After knocking the door several times, the door was opened by Hasebe Aiko, teacher Naoko's sister.

"It's you! Long time no see, how have you been?" Seeing Masashi, Aiko looked very happy.

"I came here looking for teacher Naoko. I heard that she resigned, so I wanted to come and see her."

"My sister went to Nagoya, didn't she tell you?"

"She changed job?"

"Sort of. My grandmother opened an antique shop in Nagoya. My sister had to help her look after the shop. I also can't understand why my sister has to go to that kind of vintage shop. If it were me, that would make me bored to death."

'It turned out to be like this.' Masashi was relieved.

"You're saying, you now lived here by yourself?"

"Yes, what do you think? It's cool, right?" Then she put out a victory sign.

“Then how do you manage your food?”

“This is not a problem. Before leaving, my sister has invited an aunt on my behalf. She would come everyday to clean and cook.”

“No wonder, I also felt strange that teacher Naoko would leave you to fend for yourself. Well then, since everything were alright, I should be going now.

“Don’t go. Since you’re here, why don’t you come in and accompany me to play games? I’m suffocated alone in here.”

After saying that, just like the last time, before he could speak, she has pulled him inside.

Masashi has no choice but to sit down and accompany her to play.

## Chapter 22 - Third Party

---

The game was not long as they heard the doorbell ring. Aiko paused the game to answer the door.

“Tired of waiting for you guys to come,” Aiko said.

“This guy walks too slowly.”

“Asami, I waited for you for half an hour in your home.”

“If I knew it was hot outside I wouldn’t have come.”

The four that came in was the same age as Aiko, three girls, and a guy that Masashi encountered in the past when he was eating at the restaurant with Naoko-sensei before, Yusuke Asakura.

“Who is he?” seeing Masashi, a girl whispered to Aiko

Aiko didn’t answer. Yusuke was the first to speak: “You’re Masashi, Masashi Hirota, right?”

“I haven’t seen you in a long time, I’ve changed my name, and I am now Gennai Masashi,” Masashi said disdainfully.

“Oh this,” Yusuke scratched his head a little overwhelmed.

“Aiko are they your schoolmates?” Masashi lent a hand and helped him out.

“I would like to introduce you guys. He is my sister’s former student, called Gennai Masashi, not Hiroto. This is Asami, Ryoko, Ai, Yusuke you knew that was needless to say.

“Hello, my name is Gennai Masashi.”

“Gennai sempai, pleased to meet you.” Several well-educated girl, almost simultaneously greeted him and said hello.

“Pleased to meet you.” Masashi wasn’t too used to the Japanese culture.

“Aiko, since your classmates are here, I’ll take my leave.”

“You stay for a little longer, at least until the game is finished, OK?” Aiko begged.

“Next time don’t play games all day like a kid.”

“Nasty guy.”

“No need to send me off, bye.” Schoolmates of Aiko nodded as Masashi walked towards the door.

“Next time remember to come here,” Aiko said.

“Call me if something happens. Do you know my phone number?” Masashi said as he puts on his shoes.

“Wait, I’ll go get a pen and paper,” Aiko then went to get something.

After waiting for Aiko to get back with a pen and paper, she wrote Masashi’s phone number before she went back.

“Aiko, is he your boyfriend?” Asami excitedly asked Aiko.

Yusuke’s face immediately changed, while nervously looking at Aiko.

“Crazy, I told you he was just my sister’s student.”

“Really? But it seems that your relationship is not that simple,” she added with an odd smile on her.

“It’s not what you think.”

“Aiko, be honest.”

“Irritating me .....” Aiko softly fell on the sofa.

Hearing their conversation, Yusuke's face constantly change from a loose to tight expression.

The other girl, Ai didn't join the topic and muttered: "his named Gennai Masashi."

———

"Rumi, how did you know my brother?" Asked Kazumi while cooking with Rumi.

Rumi remembered the scene at that time and said: "Two months ago, my family opened a kendo dojo in Hokkaido, that day I was training in the dojo when Watanabe nii-san called someone to look for me. I forgot to tell you Watanabe nii-san is my grandfather's main disciple. Ever since my grandpa dies, the responsibility of teaching the disciples in the dojo fell on him. That was the day I first met senior."

"Did he come to see you?"

"He didn't. He came as the disciple of Rei Yin senior to give back my grandfather's katana 'nine souls' back to my family."

"Rei Yin senior? What kind of person was he?"

"You didn't know? He is senior's master." Rumi looked at Kazumi in astonishment.

Kazumi thought for a moment and said, “What Happened afterwards?”

“At that time I didn’t know the senior was the disciple of Rei Yin senior, so I asked senior for a match. The result was a complete defeat. I had no ability to fight back. Even Watanabe nii-san was defeated in one move by senior. Because of this, I begged my father to transfer me here hoping to learn kendo from senior.”

“Kendo? Brother is getting more and more mysterious.” Kazumi shook her head.

——

In Manhattan, inside a 30-storey commercial building at the top floor, lies a few well-dressed man sitting in a meeting room listening to a man wearing a black suit reporting something important.

After reporting the man sits at the conference table the first to speak was a middle-aged man: “so you’re saying that you still don’t know why Rei Li and Changan frequently go to Japan.”

“Yes, sir.”

“And what do you think of this?” The middle-aged man said to the other people.

Then a tall blond Youth stood up and said: “Mr. Jin, as long as



they're not on our site we don't need to even bother trying to guess their intentions. After all, we're far away from Japan, as long as we continue to send people, we'll be able to monitor it."

"Well, this one here can't leave it like this." A fat middle-aged man sneered.

"Yes this matter, we can't just let go. Black Dragon forces have been getting bigger and bigger, even swallowing up several gangs which are not good news for us. If they together with the gang in Japan then, the Golden Triangle's heroin that's sold in Asia would be a severe blow. After all, Japan is the place where heroin is sold the most in Asia." A man dressed like a gentleman said.

"It's not going to be easy to join the other gangs in Japan, we have the possibility of cooperation in Japan during that time, have you not found the gang that Black Dragon meets in Japan?"

"No, we didn't find them in contact with other gangs." Said the man that reported a while ago.

"Not found or can't find?"

"Mr. Marin, what do you mean by that? Do you doubt the competence of our intelligence group?" The blonde youth spoke angrily at the obese fellow.

"I'm not saying more than just a few. Who dares to doubt second young master's ability?"

“You.....” The blonde youth madly gripped his two hands. This pig knew perfectly well that he mostly dislike the name the pig specially mentioned.

“Restrain yourself. We’re in a meeting right now.”

Seeing the two Mr. Jin spoke making the two cease fire.

“Lawrence you send someone to continue monitoring Black Dragon, also, investigate carefully the reason for Rei Li’s contact with a high-school student. When you got the information, immediately report to me.”

“I’ll do it Mr. Jin,” The blonde youth said respectfully.

“It’s too early to draw any conclusions, we’ll discuss again after getting the necessary information, now I adjourn this meeting.” Mr. Jin stands.

## Chapter 23 - Cheer

---

“Changan, did you tell master about it?”

“I already told him about the matter,” Changan said while drinking tea.

“His grandma! Mr. Jin had sent someone to spy on us, watch how I handle him. Now that master wants to become an average person we’ll have to be more careful. But this may be a good opportunity for master to come back.” Rei Li revealed a mischievous smile.

“Do you think master wouldn’t know?” Changan said disdainfully.

“Changan, don’t tell master. Otherwise, I’ll die miserably.”

“Hei.”

“What’s the matter?”

“Sorry, I forgot to turn off my phone, masters has been listening.”

“What?” Rei Li jumped towards Changan, grabbing his phone and cried: “Master, I was just kidding you don’t really ... .. huh?” Hearing the sound of a busy signal. Rei Li couldn’t help but be surprised at that moment.

“I was joking, an environmentalist like me never shuts down his phone and instead waste battery.” said Changan while leisurely getting out of the room.

“Changan, wait for me!” Couldn’t even take a joke, Rei Li shouted.

——

“Senior, next month I’ll be participating in the city’s high school kendo tournament. Can senior come and cheer for me?” Rumi came one afternoon wanting to talk about the matter.

“What, the High school also has a kendo competition?” Masashi strangely asked.

“Yes, I’ll serve as the school’s vice general of the kendo club. Can senior come to see me?” Rumi said shyly.

“I’ll go cheer for you.”

“Truly? Thanks, senior.” Rumi was very pleased, making her hold Masashi’s hand.

“What time is the match?”

“The match is next Saturday, in Tokyo kendo hall.”

“Well, I’ll go with you.”

“Thank you, senior.” A bright smile can be seen on Rumi’s face.

“The little girl is always at home. I’ll ask Kazumi if she wants to go or not. She shouldn’t have seen this competition.”

“If Kazumi can go the better it will be. Senior, I made these cookies in home economics class do you want to taste it?” Rumi took out a something wrapped in paper bags in front of Masashi.

“Are you sure I can eat it?” Masashi took a cookie from the bag and carefully studied it.

“It’s good senior. I worked very hard to make it.” Rumi said.

After knowing Masashi for over half a month Rumi has gotten more familiar with him, allowing her to talk to him casually.

“You already have a criminal record. I was impressed with last week’s piece of cake.”

“Last time I accidentally put in mustard, this time, I was very careful. You can be rest assured.” Rumi said confidently.

“Class is about to start. I’ll eat it later. You should also get back to class.”

I'm sure many people want to try this kendo girl's cooking. Masashi decided to find a scapegoat to taste it first.

It looks like people really can't be perfect, she's full of spirit when learning kendo, but really bad in cooking. After Rumi made a dish, Kazumi no longer dared to let her cook and just let her help. Masashi doesn't want anyone else to be poisoned, forcing Rumi to come home with them every day for dinner, making the meal livelier.

"Well, I'll go back first. Senior shouldn't always skip class." Rumi seriously scolded Masashi.

Masashi smiled and began to miss the past where Rumi was obedient and courteous.

After going back to his seat, several boys gathered around him. Seeing their attitude Masashi couldn't help but get a headache.

"So jealous, if Rumi can do this for me I'll be satisfied, You really are a fellow that makes one hate." Said a boy with envious eyes watching Masashi.

"Masashi, please introduce her to me ok? I'll treat you at McDonald's?" said another guy with a sad tone while kneeling down.

"I thought you said you were only friends with that kendo girl? You went too far. Why did you give me false hope? Damn you." A

boy in tears said.

“I haven’t done anything wrong to you seniors. Don’t go to me every time I hang out with Rumi. Let me off, ok.” Masashi shook his head.

“No!” Several boys said in unison.

“Oh right, Rumi just gave me some cookies, I’ll give you guys some. Do you want to try it?” Masashi took out a bag filled with cookies.

“Is that true? Give me one!”

“This is the legendary kendo girl’s hand-made cookies?” A boy with a trembling hand picked a biscuit and said excitedly.

“This is the cookie that the school flower made, also filled with the fragrance of her breath.” Another boy holding a cookie madly smells.

“This cookie represents my first love. I will always treasure it.” A boy couldn’t help and prostrate to worship the cookie.

Looking at those crazy fans, Masashi exposed a demonic smile.

—

“Why are there so many people absent, where did they go?”  
Asked the teacher in class after counting the number of students.

“Teacher, they seem to have eaten something bad, they’re now in the infirmary.” The student leader stood up and said.

“They’re too careless, well, let’s start the class now.”

“Rest in peace.” Masashi’s mouth gently moved.



## Chapter 24 - Before The Competition

---

Saturday morning soon arrived. Masashi, Rumi and Kazumi came to Tokyo by bus, arriving at the kendo hall where the competition will be held.

When they walked in, they saw the members of their school's kendo club and several instructors were also there. The people nearby were from many other schools who were preparing for the competition.

“Hello sensei, hello Ma Fang nee. I'm sorry, I'm late.” Rumi bowed towards the Kendo Club Instructor Omura Kusakabe and said.

“No, you're not late, we just arrived early. Did you have a good rest last night?” Omura said kindly.

“Thank you for sensei's concern, I had a good rest.”

“That's good. This school hasn't been in the ranking for many years now, and hope we can fight for a good result.”

“I'll work hard sensei.”

“Don't give yourself too much pressure, just do your best.” The girl named Ma Fang said.

“Yes.”

“Are these two your classmates?” Omura, noticing Masashi and Kazumi, said.

“Sensei, this is Gennai Masashi senior, with his younger sister Kazumi. They’re my most important friends, can they sit here?”

“But according to the rules only player or instructor can stay here, the others can only sit at the audience spot.” Ma Fang difficulty said.

“Can’t you bend the rules? I want senior to see my match up close to find out where I’m lacking.” Rumi continually pleaded.

“Oh, does your schoolmate also know kendo?” Omura said while looking at Masashi.

“I know a thing or two.” Masashi dismissively said.

“Since its Rumi’s request, all right, I’ll let them watch the game right here. Rumi, you should go and prepare.” Omura doesn’t believe in what Rumi said, Masashi is not likely a kendo master.

Rumi, hearing Masashi can stay, sat down very happily and started to introduce the history of Kendo hall with Kazumi.

Masashi, while listening to the 30-year history of the kendo hall,

looked around. The entire hall was very spacious, with good lighting and paved with wooden floors. The place was filled with many people using bamboo swords and wore protective gear practicing, shouting constantly.

“Ma Fang, has Ogata’s group arrived yet? Have you informed him?” Omura looked at the table, a little worried and asked Ma Fang, the kendo club manager.

“I informed him yesterday. Something probably happened, making them arrive late. I’ll call his home to ask again.”

“Good”

Ma Fang was just about to call when she heard a few boys come running out of breath.

“We’re late, sorry sensei.” A guy said.

“Ogata you’re the captain, how can you be late? And why are you guys late with him?” Omura said with a gloomy face.

“Sensei, we were up late last night in preparation for today’s competition, so I woke up late today, please forgive me sensei.”

“Is that so?” Omura looked at the other boys and asked.

“Yes, last night, we fell asleep at Captain Ogata’s place. We have

been training until 12 PM. Please forgive us sensei.” Several boys said in unison.

“Alright, next time don’t be late. Also, don’t practice until late at night. Go prepare quickly.”

“Yes, sensei.” Listening to them, Omura’s face looked satisfied.

Looking at her students back Omura showed delighted eyes, Masashi smiled.

“Rumi you’ve come.” Ogata saw Rumi sitting with Kazumi and immediately rushed to them.

“Hello, Ogata.”

“You’re still so polite, when did you get here?” Ogata took advantage of the situation and sat beside Rumi.

“I arrived an hour ago,” Rumi answered quietly.

“Are this your classmates?” Noticing Masashi, Ogata asked.

“This is my senior, Gennai Masashi, and his younger sister, Gennai Kazumi. They came today to cheer for me. Senior and Kazumi, this is our kendo club captain, Mr. Xu, who’s now in his second year.”

“Hello, my name’s Xu Ogata pleased to meet you.” Ogata looked at Masashi.

“Pleased to meet you,” Masashi said.

Kazumi didn’t say anything and just faintly nod.

“Senior do you want something to drink? I’ll go buy some for you.”

“I’ll go buy it, you stay here and talk with Kazumi. Kazumi, you want coffee, right? Rumi how about you?”

“I want soda.” Rumi was impolite to him.

“Ogata, what do you want?” Masashi turned around and asked Ogata.

“No I’m not thirsty, and our Manager will prepare those for us.”

“Then forget it.”

## Chapter 25 - Ask

---

As Masashi looked at the records of the kendo hall, Ogata asked: “Rumi, you have a very good relationship with Masashi, is he your relative?”

“No, senior is a very important person to me, but also my life goal.”

“What? You, you want to pursue him?” Ogata was surprised that his chin almost falling off.

Kazumi couldn't help but laugh, she knew what Rumi meant by “pursuit”. But this guy doesn't know that. He's only misunderstanding things.

“Yes.” Rumi thinks that these were a little strange, but still firmly replied.

“What good does that guy have?” Ogata was shocked and angry. Hearing those words, Kazumi frowned and looked at him coldly.

“Ogata, please don't insult senior, I will not allow anyone to disrespect senior,” Rumi said very seriously.

“You.....” taken aback by Rumi's words, Ogata could not respond.

“Forget it,” he then walked away resentfully.

At nine o'clock, the person in charge of the competition gathered all the players and instructors in the same place.

Then a thin person, wearing black frame glasses about 50-60 years old, half-bald man came in front of the crowd. Everyone immediately held a round of applause.

“Good morning, everyone. I am the manager of the kendo hall, Kubo Sho. I am very honored to be able to hold the annual high school kendo competition in this kendo hall. As always I hope everyone could do their best to achieve good results.”

Immediately a burst of applause could be heard.

Fortunately, this old man only had a short speech, and stepped down right away. Then the referee in charge of the matches spoke about the competition rules and precautions. After talking about the rules, the competition officially begins.

Almost all high schools in Tokyo are participating in this competition. Because of this large number of competitors, the game is held in four stages.

The competition is divided into a team competition and an individual competition, the team competition is conducted today. The competition system uses an elimination system making the competition very fierce. Everywhere you can hear the sound of bamboo sword and protective gears colliding, battle cry can also be heard, and referee stopping the match can also be heard. Some

novice that first time attends the competition was nervous, pale and trembling.

Watching the competition held Masashi began to yawn. After all, high school students, regardless of their strength and skills, compared to an adult's strength when swinging a sword has a big gap. Apart from one or two of them, many were not worth looking at.

Rumi's kendo club also has two matches, one is a private school while the other was a public high school. Aside one male member losing, the captain of the kendo club, Ogata and the vice-captain of the kendo club, Rumi won their matches. Several instructor were very happy, Omura invited them to eat at a conveyor belt sushi for winning a match.

"Senior, how did I do?" After the match, Rumi immediately came over to ask.

"The opponent was too weak. I have no pointers to instruct you. However, congratulations for winning the match." Masashi said with a smile.

"Thank you, senior." Rumi listened very happily.

"Well, even if the opponents are weak, the person that talks about them is not much better," Ogata said at the side, sneered.

"Is he talking about me?" Masashi curiously asked.



Rumi revealed her small tongue, too embarrassed to speak.

Although the members in the match were only the captain, vice-captain, and another member, three on three match, but almost every member of the Kendo came to watch. Everyone was cheering for their teammates, even though it's noisy, it was still very lively.

At noon, the competition was paused to allow the competitors to eat.

Originally Rumi wanted to invite Masashi and Kazumi to join them eat, but was refused as they didn't want to take advantage of them.

Masashi and Kazumi went to a restaurant to dine.

The match will not resume until two o'clock in the afternoon, after eating, there was still plenty of time, so Masashi and Kazumi just walk down the street.

"Brother, do you think Rumi can win?" While they were walking, Kazumi asked.

"In the team competition it's hard to say if she can win, after all there's three matches, but in the individual competition, so long as she competes like always, even if not champion, but runner-up wouldn't be a problem."

"So Rumi is so strong, I didn't know that."

“Although her personality is a little bad, she’s pretty good.”

“Brother, I heard Rumi talking about you having a match against her with no protection. When did you start practicing Kendo? Can you tell me?” While looking at Masashi, Kazumi said.

It seems that some things are unavoidable.

Masashi looked down for a moment and then looked at Kazumi’s eyes “Kazumi there are somethings that I can’t tell you, but you’re my sister, so I don’t want to lie to you. Can you let me keep some secrets?”

Masashi looked deeply at Kazumi, and after a while suddenly smile.

Then she hugged Masashi’s arm leaning her head on his shoulder gently saying, “If you don’t want to say, I won’t mind, you being nice to me is enough. I’m not afraid of anything as long as you around.”

Masashi wasn’t against Kazumi holding his hand, after a while he says: “The match is about to continue, let’s go back.”

“Ah.” Kazumi was very comfortable with him and squealed softly.

## Chapter 26 - Quarter Finals

---

The afternoon matches finally continue. There was only a few school left as most have been eliminated, there are 20 teams left.

The Kendo club is strong but has only won two matches.

The instructor Omura was very pleased with her Kendo Club as they were able to get into the quarterfinals for the very first time. Rumi being made a vice-captain was a sagacious decision. This was a thought by a middle-aged man satisfied with his own decision.

While everyone was in high spirits, only Ogata was infuriated.

He doesn't understand why such a beautiful girl such as Rumi is attracted towards this ordinary male student. No matter which aspect is mentioned, Ogata believes he is far superior than him, but even then Rumi still doesn't see him.

Ever since Rumi joined the kendo club, he was captivated by this beautiful girl, which was then that he decided to get her.

But after more than a month's worth of effort, Rumi still didn't have any feeling towards him. Although she's always modest and polite, he was still unable to be close to her.

Everyone can notice Rumi's dependence and respect towards him. Either before or after the match, as long as there's a free time she'll stay at the boy's side. She shows a kind of cute and joyful expression that many don't see.

Looking at Masashi, Ogata's anger grew fiercer and wished to ruthlessly attack him, while pretending to be innocent.

At the same time Ma Fang, the club manager was very curious about this guy named Masashi.

Together with everyone, Rumi listens carefully to the instructor's lesson but acts differently in front of the man named Masashi. She hasn't seen Rumi respect a person this much.

At other times, Rumi would talk to him very casually. But every time her match ends she would consult with him, revealing a look of respect towards him.

"Be careful with one of your opponent, Guang Yong, and if he beats you, then refer to them." Masashi cautioned Rumi after one of those matches.

"Looking at Guang Yong's matches, his attacks are ferocious and forceful, a very formidable opponent. Just that doesn't make one very strong, why is senior telling me to be careful with him?" Rumi looks at Masashi with a puzzled look.

"Don't you see it? That guy has been hiding his real strength."

"What he has been hiding his power all along?" Rumi looks at her opponent surprised.

“Yes, regardless of the opponent he always shows a narrow win. If I am not mistaken, he’s not showing his strength because his goal is not the team competition, but in the individual competition. Such people are a formidable opponent. Guang Yong shows a lot of his talents, although quite fierce, he’s always wary of his opponent, so it will be very hard to win. However, he’ll probably only show his best in the finals. I didn’t think that there would be someone in high-school that would be such an interesting person.” Masashi exposed a playful smile.

“Isn’t this too sinister?” Rumi said discontentedly.

“Is it? I don’t think so. You think kendo should be a clean competition, but he wants to increase the chances to win his match. It’s just a question of personal choice. There is no absolute right or wrong.”

“Senior, I don’t really understand.” Rumi shook her head.

“I’ll give you a simple example, you like to drink soda, and Kazumi likes coffee, I like beer, the preferences of each one are not the same, do you think this is wrong? You might think that what he’s doing is sinister, but this is his own principle, just remember that. Do you understand now?”

“I understand, senior.”

“Since you already know that he’s hiding his strength, when facing him, don’t underestimate his strength, that’s what I wanted to tell you.”

“Senior, I will certainly do my best.” Rumi’s eye reveal a raging fighting spirit.

Masashi smiled, this lovely fellow is really pure.

Next, in the quarterfinals match, the kendo club’s opponent is from Chu private school. This high school kendo club is very famous in this region. They had also won the championship of the previous competition, making them a seeded team.

The competition was fierce, but the result is as expected the kendo club lost with one win and two losses.

Although they lost, several instructors such as Omura was very happy after all this is Kendo club’s best result compared to the past. Omura celebrated it with the others.

The next day is the individual competition which everyone anticipates the most. After all, high school students want to be famous. Just getting a good ranking in the individual competition, can cause a significant and sensational event on campus. Therefore, each player was imposing their threatening manner, showing their readiness to fight.

In order to pick their opponent, each picks a ballot, which is also an elimination competition. Rumi is in the fifth match. Ogata and another member, Ida, is at the eight and third match respectively.

Unfortunately, Ida's opponent is the current best, Guang Yong, soon after he saw the draw he made a crying face.

"Ida seems very distressed."

"Rumi, you're laughing. You little brat."

"Senior you're talking nonsense, how can I laugh at people's misfortune?" Rumi immediately protested.

"On behalf of my grandfather, I swear that I saw you laughing."

"You think you're good, Senior is bad." Rumi was laughing.

Because Ida drew the third match, making him lose the competition in the first round. There was no suspense in the first round. Ida was against Guang Yong, so it was obvious he would lose the match.

Seeing Ida's dejected look, Rumi was dispirited.

Masashi gently knocked her head saying: "Don't be too compassionate ok? This lost might be a good thing for him. He needs to work harder, don't you think?"

"Thank you, senior." Rumi holding his hand, said softly.

“Well go and prepare for your match.”

“Senior, please wait a bit with Kazumi.” Then she went to the lounge to prepare.

Holding her equipment and bamboo sword Rumi went to the competition area, almost all the boys were looking at her.

As she was the only female competitor in this competition, added her cute and charming face, would naturally attract the attention of many men. No one was admiring her ability, even when she won her match as they believed that her opponents were just too weak.

After both parties wore their protective gear and performed the swordsman ritual, the match officially began.

Rumi's opponent was Aso, a tall third-grade male. He immediately struck a pose. Combined with his height, he showed a very imposing manner.

Rumi wasn't impressed, as he only put on a very ordinary middle posture.

Seeing that the opponent's posture was very strong, made everyone worry about Rumi. Kazumi also nervously grabbed Masashi's clothes.

The first attack came from the opposition Aso, like a tiger, he rushed towards her, attacking Rumi's head.



While everyone was worried, Rumi swung her sword upward at the same time, cleverly breaking this fierce sword attack. Then ceaselessly swung her sword towards her opponent's chest.

Aso, the opponent reacted fast against Rumi's sword, and very awkwardly took a big step back to avoid her attack.

The whole process only took a second or two surprising everyone, Rumi's movement was completely light like a charming butterfly.

Rumi voice could be heard as she continued her attack taking advantage of the gap that the opposition made. This sudden attack forced Aso into a corner without a choice, but to retreat.

This fight made people's blood boil making them cheer loudly. As for other division matches, there was only silence.

"Hit and effective." The referee waving his red flag cried.

Finally, Rumi hit the opponent Aso on the wrist, winning her first round. Immediately afterwards the audience claps can be heard.

"Brother, she won." Kazumi excitedly pulled Masashi's hand.

"Hitting the opponent so many times, she did well," Masashi said with a smile.

In the second round, the opposition Aso immediately rushed towards Rumi after hearing the referee scream “Start”.

Seeing Aso’s fierce attack made Kazumi worried.

“Brother, Rumi is okay, right?” Kazumi looked very worriedly towards Masashi.

“Rest assured, this level of attack she should be able to defend. As long as she gets through her opponents first round of attack, the opponent wouldn’t have a chance anymore.”

Kazumi looked at Rumi, and sure enough she didn’t show any panic. Although she didn’t know why, but she can see Rumi defending very well, constantly advancing and retreating.

“Rumi was brought up by her grandfather Nagakawa Kyuujirou’s rigorous training, although her female physique made her innate inadequate, whether it’s the speed or skill, she isn’t inferior to any adult. Seeing her skill, one can imagine how hard she worked, especially for such a girl like her.” Masashi sighed.

Kazumi thoughtfully watched Rumi. At the same time, the direction of the match gradually changed. Aso’s offensive strikes finally started to slow down, taking advantage of this change Rumi from time to time counter-attacked. After the opposition’s onslaught, the match became one-sided. Not long after Rumi effectively hit Aso.

Winning two rounds allowed Rumi to win her first match in the competition. The audience responded with a warm applause.

From that moment on, Rumi's strength as a swordsman was recognized by everyone. No one treated her as a frail competitor.

When Rumi was returning, she was surrounded by her kendo club's instructors and members, Kazumi took her hand, handed her a bottle of water, and then used her handkerchief to wipe the sweat from her forehead, in a gentle way.

Masashi smiled, it seems Kazumi does really look at her as a sister.

"You worked hard. You did well." Masashi walked over and patted her head.

Rumi blushed like a small child who was suddenly praised by a person who rarely praises people.

Kazumi, looking at the scene, couldn't help holding her laughter.

Rumi's face becomes redder. At the same time, Ogata came from winning another match. Because almost everyone saw Rumi's match, he was ignored. Accustomed to being the focus of attention, this was intolerable. But since it's their favorite girl, there was no problem. But seeing the guy standing next to her made him feel very bad.

## Chapter 27 - Individuals

---

“Rumi, congratulation you won your match. It was really intense.” Ogata walked while reminding himself to be graceful and elegant.

“You flatter me, Captain Ogata,” Rumi replied dismissively.

Ogata felt Rumi’s coldness more than ever and didn’t know what to say.

Ogata and Rumi participated in two more matches. Because the oppositions weren’t very powerful, they smoothly got into top 16.

In the afternoon, the matches with the top 16 competitors will be carried out. There were two divisions, consisting four matches each.

Rumi’s match was the first. Her opponent is a lanky sophomore, who had a good performance in the team event.

When the match was about to begin Masashi’s cell phone rang. He looked at the number and then told Kazumi that he was going outside.

“Hei, what matter do you have for you to call me?”

“Master, do I have to have a matter to call you? Can’t I call you

just to talk?”

“Masashi shouted, “Don’t kid with me, what’s the problem?”

Rei Li immediately became serious, “Master, I’ve received a reliable information, the Yamaguchi-gumi sent someone to watch you. You be careful.”

Masashi frowned “Was it because we recently met?”

“Yes, Yamaguchi-gumi has a close relationship with Tang Najin’s triad, which is also one of the Yamaguchi-gumi’s heroin seller. So they’ve asked Tang Najin to watch you.”

“Who the hell is Tang Najin?”

“In the last few years, he rose to become a crime leader. He was a Manhattan gang leader, by selling weapons five years ago, he obtained some power in Japan. His gang is now based mainly on selling heroin. It is said that he provides heroin to several big gangs.”

“What does Black Dragon want to do?”

ReiLi didn’t say anything for a while and finally said: “I want to swallow him.”

“Oh, you have a big appetite, but I like that idea. If you need this

old ghost, just call.”

“Thank you, master.”

After hanging up, Masashi exposed a pondering smile. It seems having a light workout is also a good choice.

He returned to the venue when Rumi’s match was over, and no doubt she won. Kazumi was talking to her in the lounge.

“Who’s the next opponent?” Masashi sat down beside Rumi and asked.

“It’s likely to be this guy.” Rumi was looking at the match schedule and said.

“Oh, this might be a good thing for you.”

“Yes, senior, I also wanted to have a match against him.” Rumi’s eyes shone with excitement.

“What reward do you want when you win you match against this military guy?”

“Soda.”

“Can’t you change your taste?” Well, Kazumi wants coffee?”

“Ok.”

“No, don’t be like a middle-aged person who likes coffee. Drink green tea instead.”

“Don’t be too overbearing.”

“Why I’m your brother.” Masashi laughed and walked out.

Ogata’s fourth opponents is a popular contestant that won third place last year.

“Senior do you think captain Ogata will win?” Rumi asked Masashi.

“There are not that different, but the opponent is an experienced competitor, but this is only Ogata first big game, the opponent has the advantage. This is just my view.”

“Senior what do you think?”

“Ogata will lose.”

“The reason?”

“He doesn’t have the quality of a swordsman who’s calm and

cool. If a person's feeling isn't stabilized, this could allow the enemy to win. I've seen him fight. He always rushes to his opponent at the beginning. He's quick, but he can't effectively attack the opponent's weakness. Perhaps he can't see the opponent's weakness. This offensive approach is effective against weak opponents, but if the opponent is a relatively calm person, then that person would likely be on the offensive. He does a lot of useless attacks, making it not as effective. You must know, when you attack others, you'll expose your weakness. Although it's said that offense is the best defense, if not done correctly, then it can become very dangerous."

Rumi listened thoughtfully.

"Offensive and defensive unity is the pursuit of many people in the martial way, but in fact, this isn't all. If you reach this level, then you might understand that attacking and defending are actually the same."

"Senior, I don't understand."

"You haven't reached that level yet. There's a Chinese saying that goes: you may know what it means, but can't explain."

"Thank you, for senior's teachings." Rumi respectfully bowed her head.

Kazumi, hearing the conversation, was lost in thought.



After Masashi had finished his last sip of tea, Ogata lost his match.

The next matches are for the elimination match of the top 8. Rumi is first to fight.

“Brother, do you think Rumi will win?” Hearing Masashi’s conversation, Kazumi became a little worried.

“Winning or losing doesn’t matter, but sometimes failure can let you learn more things.”

“You mean Rumi is going to lose?”

“I can’t say that would be so, in my opinion, Rumi at least have 70% chance to win.

“Detestable, speech is not clear.” Kazumi let out a sigh.

While the two had a conversation, the matches started.

Rumi and her opponent haven’t started attacking, instead intently watching each other’s movements, his body slightly leaning forward, ready to attack at any time.

Rumi seeing his black belt know that he’s a master. He also saw Rumi’s matches, although she doesn’t just have a pretty face, but isn’t a rival. Kazumi felt a little worried. Did this female child also

hide her strength? Her heart was pounding heavily.

In fact, Rumi didn't hide her strength, but she unconsciously adjusted depending on her opponent's level. If the opponent is strong, then she'll use more strength. If the opponent is weak, she'll adjust and still have a difficult match. This was why many people mistook her strength.

Masashi was very grateful, although this monster can't compare against him, for most people, he's very strong. Rumi grew up with many different opponents learning from her matches.

After a confrontation, Rumi finally attacked.

“Thrusting?” Omura sensei screamed out.

Her opponent saw Rumi stabbed towards the throat with an amazing speed. He never thought that this quiet girl would use such a sinister trick, making him unprepared, and can only use his bamboo sword to block the attack.

“Click” two bamboo sword hit together forcing the two to step back.

Rumi wasn't able to hit the opponent but still continued to press on the offense.

This attack suppressed the opponent, forcing him to draw back pathetically. Others, however, enjoyed the match, shouting very loudly.

## Chapter 28 - Struggle

---

“Brother, Rumi’s winning,” Kazumi said while excitedly pulling Masashi’s sleeves.

Masashi didn’t speak but revealed a thoughtful expression.

“Brother, is anything wrong?” Kazumi, seeing Masashi’s facial expression, asked anxiously.

Masashi suddenly stood up and walked over to Omura’s side.

Omura, who was showing a joyful mood, suddenly interrupted by Masashi, “Omura sensei, after the first round, pause the match, okay?”

“Why?” Omura and Ma Fang manager looked at him strangely.

“Because Rumi’s feet is injured.”

“What, Is that true?” Two people called out, which were Ogata and another member who were listening to their conversation.

“Yes, before the match Rumi told me she was experiencing a little pain in her foot, but now it seems that it’s becoming more and more serious, that’s why I want to pause the match.”

But she looks fine, did she really tell you that?” Omura looked at

him very suspiciously.

“Yes, so please stop the game as soon as possible. “Hearing Masashi’s serious tone, Omura started to look worriedly at Rumi.

At this time, the match was very intense, the opposition losing his initiative, added to Rumi string of attack, and forced his back to the front of the white line. He had no more place to retreat, and his only option was to counterattack, trying to overcome this dangerous situation.

Thus, the match became a one-sided situation. Rumi has the offensive advantage as her opponent had no place to escape, making the situation very favorable towards Rumi.

But then the opposition finally revealed his true strength. Even in a disadvantageous situation, he was still able to exchange blow with Rumi equally.

“Brother, is that true?” Whispered Kazumi. She didn’t remember Rumi saying those words.

Masashi nodded.

“Out of bounds. The Red side wins,” the referee on the sidelines suddenly exclaimed while waving his red flag.

Finally, his right heel stepped on the white line. Rumi worked very hard to win this bout.

“Red side request to pause the match.” When the two returned to the center of the field preparing for the second round, Omura’s request was finally called.

“Rumi, you.....” When Rumi returned to the seating, Omura was about to ask her but said nothing as she saw Masashi taking off Rumi’s right socks.

Other people are still surprised when they saw Masashi’s action. Ma Fang clearly saw Rumi’s swelling ankles. She froze for a moment and immediately went to the infirmary.

“When did this happen?” Masashi looked at Rumi.

“It seemed to happen in the last round. The opponent stepped on foot at that time. I thought it was ok, so....” Rumi said hesitatingly.

“You have a swollen ankle and still said nothing.” Masashi let her sit, holding her foot up while inspecting it.

She felt Masashi’s hand holding her feet, felt his palm’s temperature, made the beauty blush, her heart beating hard never experiencing this kind of strange feeling before.

Looking at Rumi’s blushing expression caused by Masashi holding her feet made others heart rate up unconsciously. No one said anything at that moment, making the atmosphere very odd.

Ogata was very furious, wishing that he could rush and bite Masashi.

“Fortunately, there’s no fracture, but you can no longer participate in the competition because you’re swollen feet. Forfeit.” Masashi finished inspecting and told Omura.

“So, there’s no other way.” Omura looked very disappointed.

“No, I want to continue the match,” Rumi roared.

“I will not allow you to continue and let you break your feet. Moreover, you still have another opportunity.”

“At least, let me finish this match, please?” Rumi pleaded.

“You know this guy’s strength, and if you continue this match, it may take a longer time. Be obedient, and just try again next time.”

“Don’t want to.”

“You’re not even listening to me?” Masashi looked into her eyes.

“Senior....” Rumi looked at him with tears. Masashi suddenly had a headache.

“I brought some ice, to place it on the injury, and reduce the swelling.” Then Ma Fang came holding a bag of ice and found the atmosphere a bit unusual.

“So be it, you can only go for one more round, regardless of whether or not you win or lose. Ok?” Masashi looked at Rumi’s crying face, somewhat reluctantly agree.

“Really?” Rumi stared at him.

“I never lie to children.” Masashi sighed while looking at Rumi.

“You should lessen her swollen area first?” Ma Fang said anxiously.

“I’ll help her deal with her injury, don’t come along,” Masashi said while he supported Rumi to the next room.

“Sensei, he....” Ogata pointed at Masashi and said.

“Wait, he might have a way to help.” Omura stopped Ogata and began to feel that this student called Masashi isn’t that simple.

After ten minutes, Masashi came out while supporting Rumi.

“Try it, but don’t put too much pressure on your right foot.” Masashi put down Rumi.

“Oh, it really doesn’t hurt, good magic.” Rumi took a few steps, her face showing a pleasant surprise and said.

“It only reduces swelling temporarily, remember to don’t be too hard on your right foot. Don’t forget what I just said, go.”

“Yes, senior.” Rumi went to the stage very pleased.

“How did you do that?” Ma Fang couldn’t believe how he was able to reduce the swelling of her feet in such a short amount of time.

“It’s not that I don’t want to tell you, but even if you find out how it would still be impossible to do,” Masashi said lightly.

Ma Fang naturally believed these words and didn’t ask anymore.

Although the wait was long, nobody still showed any signs of impatience.

After the swordsman ritual, the opposition grasped his sword with two hands carrying it over his left shoulder exhibiting a Hasso-no-kamae. Compared to the first round, his appearance was more terrifying. He knew that if he still hid his strength, it is likely that he’ll lose this competition, in the end, he had no choice but to use his full power.

Rumi maintained her middle posture, silently watching him.

After watching the last round, many people realized that this is a battle between masters, making it a match that everyone looked forward to.



He was the first to attack, and his style was different compared to any of his previous matches, he finally moved and strike at Rumi.

Rumi blocked the attack with her sword making everyone hear the sound of the two swords colliding.

“Brother, Rumi’s not in trouble, right?” Kazumi worriedly asked him.

“It’s hard to say. Her opponent’s very smart, he knows that Rumi’s foot is injured and won’t last long if he keeps on putting pressure on her, the situation would be very beneficial to him. Rumi still has a chance, sometimes a crisis can still be overturned.” Saying so, Masashi exposed a very devious smile.

At this point the match became increasingly unfavorable for Rumi, the foot injury obviously affected her movement speed. The opponent was in the offensive position as he rapidly attacked, several of which came close to being hit-making many people nervous.

Being forced back, it was like history was repeating itself, but this time, it was Rumi, who was being pushed towards the sidelines. Everyone could see that Rumi would lose.

If she lost this round, it would make it harder for her to win the third round, but many people didn’t know, Rumi can’t fight in the third round.

Seeing that victory was near he smiled, Rumi who has been on the defensive finally began to counterattack.

This wasn't much of a surprise, in a situation of near death people would make their final struggle and counterattack which wouldn't last very long. He knew that as long as he keeps on attacking, he would win the round. But gradually, he found out that there was something wrong. The attacks going towards Rumi had no signs of stopping, but her movement suddenly became quick and flexible, making it seem that she wasn't injured.

## Chapter 29 - Competition

---

Right then he was forced several steps back, he then thought that he was fooled and that maybe this girl isn't actually injured.

Seeing Rumi's fierce attack, made everyone shocked, then immediately broke into screams desperately shouting and cheering.

Seeing that his foot landed on the white line, he was driven to despair.

"Out of bounds, Red side wins." The referee shouted.

Almost everyone stood up to cheer and applaud.

"Senior, I won." Rumi, without even taking off her equipment immediately rushed directly towards Masashi.

"Don't run. Your feet will get worse." Masashi laughed while taking off her helmet and protective gear while Kazumi was at the side grinning.

"Omura sensei." Masashi turned to Omura and said.

"I know, I'll talk to the organizers of the competition about her resignation." Omura sadly said.

“I’ll trouble with that. We’re now taking Rumi to the hospital. I’ll leave the rest of the things up to you.” Then he picked up Rumi, walking towards the exit. Ma Fang bowed towards Omura and went along.

In the hospital, an X-ray was taken. There was no problem with the bone, just some muscle strain, the doctor plastered Rumi’s injury and then left the hospital after arranging her next appointment.

“Rumi, you should manage yourself to rest well, or move in with me for a few days, so that I can take care of you.” Ma Fang told Rumi in the car.

“No, Ma Fang nee. Senior has already arranged for me to live in with him, but thank you for your kindness.” Thinking about living with her senior and Kazumi made Rumi very excited.

“What, you’re living in with him? It’s a bad idea to.....I think that isn’t very good.” Ma Fang thought of the word “Cohabitation” but refrained from saying it.

“What’s wrong with that?” Rumi looked at her, puzzled.

This little girl didn’t understand anything. When Ma Fang was about to say something, Masashi suddenly spoke to her: “Schoolmate Ma Fang, my sister also lives with me, she would take good care of us, please rest assured.”

When Ma Fang was looking at his eyes, it revealed a surprisingly calm expression, making her unable to say anything.

—

“I want to compete with you.” A week has passed ever since the competition, and one day, when Masashi was sending off Rumi to the kendo club, and was about to leave, he was stopped suddenly by Ogata.

Masashi frowned and said: “I am not a member of the kendo club, why do I need to have a match with you?”

“Do you dare? Coward.” Ogata raised his eyebrow while looking at him.

Masashi laughed, seeing this childish act, he didn't pay him anymore attention.

“I'll pick you up after school, remember not to run around, your feet still needs to rest.” Masashi was too lazy to pay attention to him and instead spoke to Rumi.

“I know, senior goodbye.” Rumi returned a sweet smile.

Looking at Masashi ignoring him and leave the kendo club, Ogata couldn't help but rush in front of him while pointing his bamboo sword at him, and said: “You coward, you don't even dare to compete.”

Ogata's action immediately attracted the attention of all the members, and suddenly gathered around them.

Everyone's face exposed a strange smile.

Almost everyone knew, Ogata likes Rumi. Rumi has always been cold toward him. Everyone can see her attachment and respect towards Masashi.

It seemed like there was a good show.

"Ogata, what are you doing?" Ma Fang stood up and looked at him seriously.

"It's none of your business. I just want to have a match with this guy."

Omura was rarely not here, which finally gave Ogata a chance.

"I'm sorry, I refuse." This was simply a competition produced by jealousy.

"You coward." Ogata extended his bamboo sword in front of Masashi.

"Captain Ogata, We'll have a match. I already said in the past that I would never allow anyone to disrespect senior." Rumi holding a bamboo sword looked at him coldly.

Ma Fang and the others were very surprised with her action. They had never seen Rumi like this before.

Rumi was the most popular in the kendo club. Everyone likes her laugh and also loved this sweet and innocent girl appearance. Moreover, she was very nice to everyone, and never lost her temper. Even when winning her practice matches, she would still show a modest and polite attitude, making people feel comfortable.

But at this time, Rumi has completely transformed into a drawn sword, making people chill.

Being made as the opponent made Ogata feel embarrassed. He just wanted to show off to Rumi and beat Masashi in front of everyone, and make him look like a fool, but he didn't expect that the situation would turn around on him.

“A child shouldn't make fights very casually.” At this time, the neglected Masashi suddenly said something, and then took away the bamboo sword being held by Rumi's hands.

“Senior you....”

“Since others want to play, I'll accompany, and teach them,” Masashi said disdainfully.

“Yes, senior.” Rumi, understanding the meaning of Masashi's words, stood aside.

“Student Ogata, if you insist on a competition, then I’ll gladly accompany you.” He then walked to the center of the stage.

Ogata was jubilant, immediately following him while holding up his sword. The members gathered at the sidelines to watch.

When Ogata was putting on his protective gear on the field, he saw Masashi actually not wearing any protective gear.

“Don’t you have a protective gear? Takeuchi, lend him your protective gear.” Ogata said to a boy.

“No, let’s just start.”

“You.....” Ogata felt he was being belittled, making him furious.

“Schoolmate Ogata, if we’re still not starting, then I’ll just take my leave, I’m very busy,” Masashi said lazily.

“You chose not to wear a protective gear yourself, don’t blame me for what happens to you.” Ogata rushed furiously.

“Rumi is there really no problem with this? Although it’s just a bamboo sword, if it hits will still be painful, and may even cause injury.” Ma Fang told Rumi.

“He can’t hit senior.” Rumi’s eye shone with complete



confidence.

Listening to Rumi still made Ma Fang doubtful, and then very worriedly looked at the match of the two on stage.

Slowly, she began to believe what Rumi said. No matter how vicious Ogata attacked, Masashi would be still able to block all of the opponent's attacks effortlessly.

His style was unique as after blocking Ogata's sword, his sword would already be at the opponent's wrist, throat, chest and other vital areas, forcing Ogata to have no other way but to defend or retreat. If a common swordsman was able to seize an opportunity and launch a counter-attack, Masashi would be the opposite as he would just stand still, waiting for Ogata's next attack.

Ogata right now was in a depressed state. Each time he was about to attack, just like a ghost Masashi's sword would suddenly appear on his vitals, forcing him to defend or take a step back. This strong sense of oppression made him extremely depressed almost making him vomit blood.

Ma Fang and the other members stared at the match, they had never seen such swordsmanship.

Rumi, standing next to Ma Fang, stared intensely, watching the match with wide open eyes never letting anything miss her sight.

"The match has ended, schoolmate Ogata." At this time, Masashi

suddenly said something, then stabbed his sword towards Ogata.

No one could see the sword, no one could describe the sword, the only thing they could see was Ogata flying out horizontally.

“Popping” a sound of a person falling on the ground could be heard, everyone’s mind was blank, including Omura sensei who was just outside.

“Please join the kendo club. As long as you are in the club, even making it into the national competition isn’t a dream.” When Ma Fang and several members sent Ogata into the infirmary to check his condition, Omura sensei very excitedly came and seized Masashi’s shoulder.

“I’m sorry, I will not join.” Masashi slowly pulled away Omura’s hand.

“Why, don’t you want to become the champion? If you have any demands, just tell me.” Omura lost a little bit of control.

“My sword isn’t used for games.” Saying so, Masashi turned and walked out of the kendo club.

“I will not give up,” Omura shouted at the back, in a firm tone.

## Chapter 30 - New Year

---

Time flew quickly, and a semester had gone by, and in a blink of an eye, New Year was quickly approaching.

The Yamaguchi-gumi still sent people to tail Masashi, but as usual, he pretended he didn't know that anyone was following him. After two months of investigation, the Yamaguchi-gumi wasn't able to find out any information. Finally, they stop their investigation.

On the other hand, the leader of the Black Dragon and Tang Najin's Manhattan Gang led several massive street fights, causing harm to both sides. This caused the attention of other gangs and the local police. Even some people felt that a major event would happen.

Sure enough, a month later, Tang Najin died in his apartment.

It caused a huge uproar. Everyone suspected that Black Dragon caused it, but no one could prove that suspicion. This was because there was always a bodyguard around Tang Najin, but even they testified that no one killed him, as they didn't allow any stranger to approach him within five meters and will immediately be shot if they did so. Moreover, he, himself was also an amazing professional marksman. But such a person still died inside his own home.

Most people thought that it was a robber that killed him, but there was also no cut on him. Even Manhattan's best forensic

official could only judge that he died of a heart attack.

But no one could accept this conclusion because Tang Najin have never had any history of heart disease.

In any case, a person has died. The Manhattan gang was now in chaos. Many factions of Tang Najin's gang were suppressed, because of turf fights occurring almost every single day. The death of Tang Najin led to the gang's internal strife, causing it to fall apart.

In such a lively situation, the Black Dragon was quiet for some period. Although everyone knew the purpose of Black Dragon, they knew that Black Dragon had good equipment and huge manpower, and had no one having the capabilities to stop their formidable force.

In only half a month, the Black Dragon became the leader of Manhattan.

This result made the local police both happy and worried at the same time.

The daily scene of turf fights which finally ended made the local police happy, and now they didn't need to worry about public complaints and calling for the police for help. The only worry that they had was the international underworld organization Black Dragon was far more dangerous than the gang led by Tang Najin. Now that things have gotten to this point they couldn't do anything about it, having no other choice but to increase the staff

monitoring them.

“Master, are you really not going to accompany us during New Year?” Four days before New Year, in Tokyo airport’s VIP terminal, a tall black youth accompanied by a very attractive woman spoke to a teenager in Chinese.

“You know that the identity I have now has its own family. If I don’t celebrate the New Year with them, they’ll get worried about me. When New Year is done, we can get together then.”

“Well, remember to call me when you’re free,” ReiLi said reluctantly.

Masashi nodded, and took out a red envelope inside his pocket and handed it over.

“Every New Year I would always give you a red envelope, this year is no exception, though it’s a bit ahead. Take it.”

ReiLi’s eyes immediately turned red, and after a while slowly took the red envelope, unable to say anything.

“Changan, I’ll leave the future affairs to you. “ Masashi said to the white man next to him.

“Master, rest assure I know what to do,” Changan said respectfully.

Looking at the gentle and refined Changan, Masashi sighed, “Changan, I know that you don’t like to talk about this, but are you sure you’re not going to find another partner?”

“Master, ever since she died, my heart also died.” His tone was light seemingly saying that it’s not any other people’s business.

“Yeah, losing even only one person can make one unhappy.”

“It’s been so many years; I’ve already gotten used to it,” Changan smiled faintly. In Masashi’s eyes, it was only a forced smile.

“Masashi didn’t know what to say, and had instead turned to ReiLi, saying: “It’s almost time, get on the plane, if you have any problems you can’t manage come and look for me.”

“Sensei, You have to take care.” ReiLi reluctantly looked at him.

Masashi said with a smile: “You’ve become a great person, but still acts like a child, go...”

ReLi took three steps back toward the wicket.

“Please take care Master..”

“You too.” Masashi patted his shoulder.

Changan kowtowed toward him, then left.

Once they both got into the cabin, Masashi sighed softly, “another year.”

The emphasis of Japanese on New Year was the same with the Chinese people; the only difference was that the Japanese New Year was on January 1. They would put on fireworks on New Year’s Eve or drink alcohol to celebrate. Some areas would conduct large-scale rituals. As for the young or old people, they would be staying at home watching the Year-end song festival “Kohaku Uta Gassen (Red and White Song Contest” every year.

In the morning of New Year’s Day, Japanese people would go to the temple to burn an incense and ring bells, and pray that the year would be better to the Gods. They would also go to their friends and relatives to visit each other.

To some extent, Japanese New Year and Chinese New Year custom were very similar.

Because of the divorce, Masashi’s family was split into half, wondering whether this was a good thing or a bad thing, except for a few immediate need to visit relatives, others can be avoided, making it pretty easy.

“Masashi, Rumi sent you a letter.” During New Year’s morning, Rumiko smiled while handing two letters to Masashi.

Rumiko was revealing a strange smile, causing Masashi's head to ache a little.

“Mom, I told you many times, I don't have anything with Rumi, you're thinking too much.”

“I didn't say anything. What? Do you actually have a relationship with her?” Rumiko said in a cunning way.

“It's not that kind of relationship that you have in mind,” Masashi said a little weakly.

At that moment, Masashi handed the letter to Rumiko, “Mom, this letter is for our family. Rumi is also greeting you in the letter.”

Rumiko took the letter and saw that it was filled with greeting cards written in brush.

“Masashi, Rumi is a very good girl, you have to take care of her better.” She couldn't help but laugh after saying that.

Masashi shook his head and continued to look at another letter.

When Rumiko saw Rumi for the first time, she thought that she was a simple and well-behaved girl who she liked very much. If Rumi could become her future daughter-in-law, she would smile as if it was a dream come true.



Then Kazumi brought a rice cake from the kitchen and asked: “Brother, who’s that letter from?”

“One’s from Rumi while the other were sent from our junior high school classmates, it seems that they want us to go to their student reunion.”

“Junior high school reunion? I’m not going.” Kazumi said without hesitation.

Masashi thought that this junior high school reunion would be very boring, but seeing Kazumi’s reaction, made him change his mind.

“Kazumi, I’ll accompany you.”

“Do you want to go?” Kazumi was a little astonished.

“Yes, we’ll go together.”

“Okay,” Kazumi said reluctantly.

# Chapter 31 - Alumni Association

---

After a few days, in the evening, Masashi and Kazumi as scheduled, arrived at the alumni association ballroom.

It was a large ballroom, just going inside, they suddenly felt warm. There were many guests inside, the stereo was loud, and everywhere one can see young people drinking and dancing.

They went to the front desk, where the lady led them inside the big theater room.

Going inside, Kazumi saw a lot of familiar faces. Masashi on the other hand, only knew them through his memory, having no affection towards them, making him feel like a stranger.

“Excuse me, are you.....” seeing Kazumi and Masashi come in, a guy came up and asked.

“Hello, you’re Zhang Dao classmate right. I’m Masashi.”

“What, you’re Masashi Hirota? You’ve changed so much.” Zhang Dao said in surprise.

“I have?” Masashi unconsciously touched his own face.

“You must be Masashi’s younger sister Kazumi? It seems you haven’t changed much.” Zhang Dao turned around and looked at

Kazumi and said.

“Hello,” Kazumi said dismissively.

Zhang Dao smiled, and, sure enough, noticed that even her personality hasn't changed.

Hirota wasn't very popular in junior high school, but compared to high school it was much better, many people copied his homework. Seeing Masashi, they seemed very surprised but soon continued to chat.

These high school students would talk about nothing but, where to study, so and so got a new girlfriend, a star had an open house photo shoot, what new games were out, which school was this beauty in and so on. Masashi refrained from yawning next to anyone.

Masashi originally intended to participate in the Alumni Association and wanted Kazumi to communicate with more people, and improve her eccentric character, but it seems that it had no effect. He saw Kazumi's face, which revealed a feeling of emptiness making people avoid her.

“Are you bored?” Masashi whispered to her.

Kazumi didn't say anything, but her eyes showed an answer to this question.

Masashi looked away from her, glanced around and saw a poker table, taking over it.

After sitting down, Masashi skillfully washed the cards.

Kazumi revealed a puzzled look after Masashi washed the cards Masashi and fixed it, placing it in front of her.

“Come on, choose one, remember don’t let me see it,” Masashi said with a smile.

Seeing Masashi’s encouragement, Kazumi picked one card.

“Did you remember the card you choice?”

Kazumi nodded.

“Put the card face down in the middle. Remember not to let me see it.” Masashi placed the whole deck in front of her.

According to the instruction Kazumi inserted the card in the middle.

Masashi took the cards and washed it again.

Washing it twice in a row, Masashi dealt all the cards and spread it face down.

“My sixth sense told me ..... this isn’t the card you selected,” Masashi smiled and opened a card; it was a 2 of hearts.

“And this isn’t it.”

“This isn’t it also.”

Masashi opened five cards in a row.

Kazumi smiled and asked: “You’re going to open all cards until you find it?”

After saying so, Masashi suddenly pulled out a card, “it’s this, right?”

Kazumi nodded a bit surprised. It was indeed that card.

Masashi smiled and put the cards back, washing it again and said: “This is only a warm up, there’s still a better one.”

He put the whole deck in the hands of Kazumi, then held her hands tightly.

Then spread out his hands in front of her, “Watch this, I don’t have anything, but....”

During those words, a 7 of diamonds suddenly appeared on his palm.

“Ah.” Kazumi unconsciously cried.

“That’s strange; this isn’t the card that I wanted,” Masashi said to himself.

Then he closed his hands and right away opened it, the 7 of diamonds changed to a king of hearts.

“Wrong again.”

This time, the king of hearts turned into 2 of spades.

“This is wrong again.” Masashi a little frustrated.

Then the 2 spades instantly became a Queen of clovers.

Kazumi was stunned to see the cards changing repeatedly.

“How did you do that?” Beauty held his hand while inspecting him and asked.

“Secret.” Masashi mysteriously blinked.

“Despicable guy, tell me.”

“It’s not over yet, don’t be too impatient. Come shuffle the deck.” Masashi handed her the cards.

Kazumi obediently shuffled it.

“Did you finish shuffling it?”

Kazumi nodded.

Masashi took the cards and divided it equally into groups of four. Then he suddenly snapped his finger, opened the first stack of cards, each card were A’s, just four A’s.

Kazumi’s eyes were wide opened and was about to speak, just then Masashi shook his head, then put the four A face down on the table, and stacked the remaining cards on top of the 4 A’s. Then he smiled mysteriously, and snapped his fingers, opening the first four stocked cards, the cards revealed was actually the four A’s that was supposed to be at the bottom of the deck.

“Brother, tell me how you did it.” Kazumi held his hand and acted like a spoiled brat.

When Masashi was about to speak, he suddenly heard a clear voice. “You’re really good, how did you change it?”

He turned around and saw two beautiful girls, one was wearing a

lavender dress while the other wore a white dress. The girl who wore a lavender dress spoke.

Behind them were two quite handsome looking boys.

“It’s just a trick, no big deal,” Masashi said lightly.

“What’s your name, I haven’t seen you before.” The lavender dressed girl asked.

“My name is Gennai Masashi; this is my sister Gennai Kazumi.”

“Gennai? I don’t remember anyone having a name Gennai in our class? Do you know?”

The girl wearing a white dress shook her head, looked at the two boys behind her but also waved their hand not knowing who they were.

“Clara, he was formerly Hirota Masashi, but changed his surname now.” The guy he just talked to interrupted.

“So it’s Masashi schoolmate, I remember now. You’ve changed so much.” Clara was unable to think that the ordinary boy before and this person was actually the same person.

“Can you do that magic again?” Clara looked at him curiously.



“Clara, let’s just dance. That trick is just meant for fooling children and isn’t that good.” The boy wearing jeans said while provokingly looking at Masashi.

“This is really just a trick to deceive children, but many people couldn’t see the flaws, a pity.” Unfortunately, at the same time, Masashi sighed while looking at the boy, who had a maddening smile.

“Do you dare to show me again?” the boy wearing jeans said with a sneer.

Masashi smiled and placed the cards into two stacks, and then in a very gentle way put them altogether and shuffled it. They saw the cards flying up and down as if the card was alive dancing; the others were charmed and screamed incessantly.

After shuffling it, Masashi put down the cards and lined it up, just like before, all cards were face down, “Please choose one, and then remember that card.”

The boy took a card, then looked at the card and pressed it on the table to prevent Masashi to see it.

“Please put the card in the middle of the deck.” Masashi placed the rest of the cards in front of him.

The boy carefully placed the card in the middle, then gave the cards back to Masashi.

Masashi took the cards, and shuffled it again, and then spread out the cards. The boy stared at him, trying to find flaws.

Masashi was about to reveal the first card, and suddenly thought of something to say: “Sorry, I forgot, the card isn’t here, please open your pocket.”

The boy opened the pocket on his denim shirt and even found the card he selected inside. He was immediately shocked, speechless. While the others clapped their hands and loudly cheered.

## Chapter 32 - Provocation

---

“That’s amazing, it’s like magic, how do you do that?” Clara looked at him in surprise.

“You also choose one, remember it, and don’t let me see.”

Clara, from the spread out card, selected a card and carefully looked at it.

“Put the card back and wash it yourself.” Masashi knocked the table and pointed at the rest of the cards.

So, after Clara selected the card, she mixed it back with the others and washed it up.

“Are you finished?”

Clara nodded her head.

Masashi held the whole cards his hand and said to Clara: “Now the whole card has been shuffled, it is impossible to find out the right card, so I need you to help me. Now stretched out your right hand, and carefully think about your card, and focus it on your right hand.”

Clara obediently extended her right arm then closed her eyes and thought very seriously.

The atmosphere became very mysterious, and everyone was so engrossed in watching Masashi and Clara.

“That’s enough, now open your eyes, then use the back of your right hand to pat the card on my hand.”

Clara obediently patted the cards with the back of her right hand. One of the card on Masashi’s hand gently floated down, and when it fell face up, it showed a King of hearts.

“This is it. Magical!” She grabbed Masashi’s hand to take a look. She didn’t understand how could the card that she choose would fall from his hand.

Everyone laughed and clapped vigorously. Except for that boy, who looked at Masashi with an ashen face.

—

“Lovely lady, can you dance with me?” When everyone was dancing on the dance floor, Masashi smiled to Kazumi and said.

“I don’t know how to dance.” Kazumi a bit shyly said.

“It’s very simple. I’ll teach you.” Then he pulled her to the dance floor.

After several times stepping on Masashi's feet, Kazumi's dance began to take shape, although her movement was still very stiff.

"I was right, wasn't I? This is really simple."

"Brother, sorry, are your feet still hurt?" Kazumi apologetically looked at Masashi.

"Little fool, what kind of people do you think your brother is? I am the so-called coarse-skinned, thick-fleshed man." Masashi said with a smile.

Kazumi laughed and silently put her head on his chest.

"Oh yeah, Kazumi, did my appearance change a lot? Otherwise, why did each of my former classmates say that I did change?" Masashi touched his face and asked.

"Fool, did you never look in the mirror?"

Masashi thought for a moment, then said: "It seems like I am different than before."

Kazumi, watching Masashi pretended to be serious, laughed and gently hugged him, then said: "Brother, may I stay by your side please?"

"Suit yourself, as long as you're fine with me bothering you."

Kazumi squinted her eyes and lightly laughed: “I’ll be the one who trouble you.”

After dancing through a song, Masashi took Kazumi aside to rest.

“Do you want anything? There’s probably no coffee here. How about orange juice?”

Kazumi nodded her head.

Masashi went to the front desk to buy a soft drink. A girl came over. She was the girl wearing white dress who previously stood next to Clara.

“You’re really a good brother. Can you buy me a drink?” That girl charmingly looked at him.

“Please bring me a glass of juice to the lady.” Masashi said to the bartender at the front desk.

“Did you just buy me a glass of juice?” That girl said, smiling.

“Then please add two chunks of ice.”

The bartender gave a faint smile on her lips.

The girl laughed: “Fool, did you never drink wine with a girl?”

“A juice should be fine for a child. Nobody stipulated that one should drink alcohol at the bar.” Masashi said lightly.

The girl’s face changed, “Do you think you’re so great? What makes you said I still a child!”

“What’s wrong with being a child, perhaps a few years later you want other people to say you’re acting young.”

“You....” The girl clenched her teeth in anger.

“Little demon is really a little demon (an endearing term for a child), just because you had previously drunk with a man and followed him home to have sex doesn’t mean you changed into an adult. I give you a piece of advice, if you don’t even respect yourself, don’t expect other people to respect you. Excuse me.” With that, Masashi took the two glasses of drink away.

The girl bitterly looked at Masashi’s back.

“Sorry for making you wait for so long, this is your orange juice.” After he had got back to his seat, Masashi handed the orange juice to Kazumi.

“That’s an attractive girl you’ve talked to, why don’t you talk to her a bit longer?”

Masashi took a sip of his beer and said: "I don't have any interest in a socialite."

Kazumi pursed her lips and smiled: "Oh, you really know how to talk evil. The other people is pretty. If they knew several boys, that's also normal."

"Simultaneously have a relationship with several boys still called normal? People must have self-respect."

"You looked like an old man." Kazumi snickered.

"It's still early, want to dance?"

"I don't want to dance, just go invite other girls. As long as you talk to them, there should be no problem."

"Never mind, I also am a bit tired, better take a seat."

Kazumi knew Masashi didn't want to cast her alone in here; Feeling moved and happy, she desperately tried to hold back her eyes that were suddenly filled with tears. She lowered her head to pretend to have a drink.

When they spoke, several people suddenly came.

Walking in the front were the two boys who previously followed



Clara and the white dressed girl. Behind them were Clara and the white dressed girl.

“This is certainly a misunderstanding, schoolmate Masashi wouldn’t do this kind of thing, don’t mess around.” Clara was following after them, trying very hard to persuade the two boys.

“What can I do for you?” When the two boys arrived in front of Masashi, he looked up and said.

“Kid you really are full of yourself, you even dare to make a move to my girl.” The black-gowned boy stared at Masashi and said.

Masashi burst out laughing. It seemed the movie Young and Dangerous was quite popular; even Japanese young people learned a few words of the classic clip.

That boy looked at the ‘without caring anything’ Masashi couldn’t resist anymore and grabbed his collar.

When he almost caught it, Masashi suddenly reached out a hand and casually brushed his hand aside.

“Before the matter is clear you already want to pick a fight? I don’t know which one is your so called ‘girl,’ can you help me introduce?”

“Shizuko, he’s the one who molested you, right?” The boy said to the girl in white dress.

“That’s him. He said he wanted to buy me a drink, but afterwards, he started to molest me.” Shizuko maliciously looked at Masashi.

“Oh, there is such a thing? How about I help you find a witness? The bartender should’ve witnessed the whole process of me molesting you, just give him some small tips, I believe she should be very cooperative to explain the truth.” Masashi said as he looked at Shizuko’s eyes.

Shizuko didn’t dare to look at Masashi in the eye. She shook the boy’s hand and said: “I don’t care, you’re going to teach him a lesson for me. Otherwise, we’ll immediately break up.”

“Shizuko, how can you be like this, you’re too much.” Clara unable to stay silent anymore finally said.

“Clara, you don’t need to care about this, we don’t need to be polite toward these people.” The other boy said. He already had a grudge toward Masashi since the previous card show. When he finally has this opportunity, he certainly not going to miss it.

Masashi sighed, “Kazumi, you’re right, it’s a bit boring here. Maybe we shouldn’t have come, let’s go back instead.”

“Em.” Kazumi picked up the coat and stood up.

“What’s wrong? Want to escape?” Shizuko’s boyfriend grasped

Masashi's neck.

Suddenly a hand came on the back of his hand, then came a burst of severe pain from his palm, he couldn't help but cried.

“Don't mess with me, or you'll regret it.” Masashi dismissively looked at him and then let go of his hand, and walked out with Kazumi.

“You just let him go like this? Why don't you do it?” Shizuko was furious.

Her boyfriend didn't say anything, just staring at five highly visible black, blue fingermarks. The look in Masashi's eyes when he was just about to leave, suddenly reappeared in his mind, making him can't help but sweating out cold sweat.

Feeling a sudden burst of cold wind as soon as they walked out of the ballroom, Kazumi immediately shrank her neck.

“It's still early, let's eat a bowl of ramen noodles first.” Masashi walked over and put a scarf on her neck.

“Good, I haven't eaten ramen noodles for a long time.” Kazumi thought this suggestion was splendid.

“But where to buy ramen noodle here?”

“I don’t know, but it should be sold in many places, let’s walk around and see.” Closely grasping Masashi’s arm, the girl felt very warm.

## Chapter 33 - Gift

---

In just about half a month it would be Masashi and Kazumi's spring break, but Rumiko was going to work.

Thinking that it would a long time to see her son and daughter made Rumiko very sad. In front of them, she didn't show it.

A morning two days before she needs to get back to work, she suddenly received a phone call. After listening to the call, this thirty-year-old middle-aged woman cheered like a child.

"Mom, did anything happen?" Making breakfast in the kitchen Kazumi was startled, and quickly rushed out to ask her.

"Kazumi, I got a job here in Tokyo." Rumiko excitedly grabbed Kazumi's hand.

"Is that true?" Kazumi couldn't believe it and said.

"It's true, I've just received a phone call, beginning this year, I'll get transferred to a Tokyo branch to work. We can live together now." Rumiko said as she broke into tears.

Kazumi was also excited and couldn't say anything, and clung to her mother in tears.

Coming out from the bathroom, Masashi saw the mother and

daughter embracing each other, mouth revealing a warm smile.

—

“Masashi, where are you taking us?” In the taxi, Rumiko asked puzzled.

After eating lunch, Masashi suddenly told Rumiko that he wanted to take her and Kazumi to a place, then put on a mysterious look.

“Mom, you’ll find out soon,” Masashi said with a smile.

Rumiko was in a good mood today and went with him.

Sitting for about ten minutes in the taxi, they finally got out and arrived at the front of a two-storey building.

This was a typical house, there were walls on the outside, inside there was a large garden, a green lawn, filled with all kinds of plants and flowers under the shining sun, looking full of vitality.

“Masashi, who are you taking me to see?” Rumiko couldn’t remember any relatives or friends living here.

Kazumi didn’t say anything, and just stared at the wall outside the house’s entrance.

Masashi smiled and readily opened the door to go inside the house.

“Masashi, you’re too rude, you have to notify the owner of the house before you go in.” Rumiko was a little angry.

“Mom, Kazumi, go in.”

“But....”

Not allowing her to finish talking, Masashi quickly took her hand and went to the front of the house, then pushed the door with his and went inside.

Seeing her son’s rude behavior made Rumiko both angry and anxious, and was about to speak, but Masashi spoke first.

“Mom, do you like this house?”

“What?” Rumiko didn’t think her son would ask this question.

“Come on, let’s take a look in this house.” Masashi took her around the house.

“Masashi, did you bring me here because you wanted me to rent this house?” Rumiko finally understood a little bit.

“Of course not, This is our house, why do you want to rent it?” Masashi said with a smile.

“What? What did you just say?” Rumiko couldn’t believe what she heard.

Masashi pulled out a piece of paper from his pocket and showed it to her.

Rumiko looked at it and suddenly felt dizzy.

She grabbed the paper and carefully looked at it for a long time, looking at the top of the page she could see several character that showed: House book contract, and then at the bottom of the contract showed the house owner; her name was clearly written there: Gennai Rumiko.

“What’s going on?” Rumiko finally managed to speak.

“This is our house now, it clearly says that you’re the owner of this house, do you understand now?”

“I’ll ask you, where you got the money to buy this house.” Rumiko slowly calmed down and looked at Masashi very seriously.

“What I’m going to say will be a bit long, so let’s sit down first then talk, okay?”



Rumiko had sat down; her eyes looked at him closely.

Masashi originally wanted to make a pot of tea to have a drink while talking, but seeing Rumiko's freaked out expression, he obediently sat down to explain.

"That's what happened, do you get it now?" Speaking for a full twenty minutes, Masashi was finally able to explain the situation clearly.

Rumiko looked at her son, then looked at her hand that held a thick pay record, it made her feel like she was in a dream.

"You mean, you paid the house using the money you got from the stock market, is it?" Said Rumiko a little weakly.

"Yes, in fact, you don't have to be worried too much, this house was used before, so it's not very expensive."

Rumiko still couldn't believe it, but in her hands was the secured transaction, making her have no choice but to believe.

"Where did you get the money for the stocks?" Rumiko suddenly thought of a problem.

"A friend lent it to me."

Rumiko opened the first transaction, pointing to the

information, said: “Your friend lent you five million to buy stocks?”

Masashi’s heart smiled bitterly; this was indeed the only mishap in the plan.

“My friend’s family is very rich, five million in his opinion was a small amount. I’ve just mentioned, that I met him online with a few rich kids, I borrowed money from one of them. Because these people had their own company, they thought me how to learn more about the company using their financial record, so that I can make money in the stock market, of course, in return, I wouldn’t tell anyone these trade secrets. So please don’t worry, mom, the money I earned is absolutely clean, I will not do anything that would make you disappointed.

Looking at his son’s clear and calm eyes, Rumiko’s heart slowly settled down.

“Do you still have the 5 million?”

“I had already paid it a long time ago, and I’m now using my own money to buy stocks.”

Rumiko felt relieved.

Masashi took out a yellow cheque from his pocket and passed it to Rumiko, “Mom, here’s three million, I’m giving it to you.”

“I, I don’t.” Not done yet, Rumiko’s mind was numb.

“If you don’t, I’ll feel troubled. I had wanted you to take a break, since you don’t, that’s why I had to work for some time now.” Masashi shook his head and sighed.

Rumiko immediately grabbed the cheque in his hand, “You daring brat, don’t you ever do this again, and focus on your studies.” Rumiko hissed.

Masashi laughed loudly.

In fact, what he just told Rumiko was only half-true, he did use five million to buy stocks. But he didn’t have much patience and time to wait for the five million to slowly increase, so he threw down several hundred million dollars to fry up the stock price.

When he was the boss of the Black Dragon, They also have done such a thing, but each time was because Black Dragon’s internal funds were in a very tight situation and was forced to do so. Because every time they use their funds, it would always be at billion, and if they’re not careful they would be finished.

Now it was a lot easier because there was nothing that is burdening him, making it very handy.

No one wanted to use hundreds of millions of dollars to only one company and then lose it, just for a mere sum of ten million dollars of profit.

“Kazumi, I’ll take you to your room.” Masashi pulled Kazumi away, leaving Rumiko behind to slowly digest this unexpected surprise.

Masashi took her to a room on the second floor and first opened the French windows inside. The bright sunlight was coming through, scattering the winter cold.

Kazumi looked around the room and saw that it was spotless, there was a single bed on the left, on the right there was two large bookcase, against the wall was a desk, and an LCD computer desktop was on top of it, which was next to a lamp. Then facing the bed is a big wardrobe. Although there was a lot of things inside, it still didn’t seem like it was crowded.

Suddenly, a fragile sound was heard, and Kazumi looked up the thing hanging on the window sill which was a very beautiful wind chimes, which was where the sound came from.

“Do you like this room?” Masashi asked.

“Like it very much.” Kazumi fell on Masashi’s arms crying.

“Little fool, you don’t have to cry.”

Finally letting her family reunited, Masashi let out a satisfied smile.

## Chapter 34 - Moving

---

The next day, Rumiko found the previous owner of the house return. As the previous owner picked her things up, she suddenly heard someone rang the doorbell.

Opening the door, it turned out to be someone who she hasn't seen for a long time the police officer Ryutaro Maeda.

“Hello, Mr. Maeda.” Rumiko was surprised.

“Ms. Rumiko, hello, I'm here to help you move in. Is everything ready for it?” Maeda said, smiling.

“How did you know we're moving?”

When Maeda was about to answer, Masashi suddenly came out, seeing Maeda and said: “Oh, you've worked hard today.”

“I haven't done anything yet. I'll carry the heavy stuff first.” Maeda said while pulling his sleeves up.

“This are the original pieces of furniture of the house, so there's no heavy things, just some clothes, dishes, but Kazumi has a lot of books, which may be a bit heavy.”

Rumiko stared at the two having a conversation between two men. When they finished, she immediately dragged Masashi to one

side.

“Did you call Mr. Maeda?”

“Yes.”

“How can you trouble people, he isn’t very familiar with us,” Rumiko said somewhat angrily.

“I thought you have something going on, doesn’t he often call you?”

Masashi exposed a meaningful smile.

“You..... What do you know?” Rumiko suddenly blushed.

“I know he went to Nagoya to go look for you. He must say that his on a business trip, right?”

“We don’t have anything, you don’t....” Rumiko became more and more quiet.

“Mom, police officer Maeda is a good man, you should seriously consider him.”

“But.....”

“You don’t have to force yourself, and don’t need to suppress yourself, try to spend some time with him. If you think he’s the right on, then I’ll tell Kazumi at that respect, I believe she’ll understand,” Masashi looking at her clearly.

“I, I know.” Discussing such things with her son, Rumiko couldn’t help but turn red.

Things were then moved into the new house, Maeda also went in to help clean up, which made Rumiko very embarrassed.

After the meal, it was already 7 p.m. Rumiko went into the kitchen to cut fruit, while Kazumi laid her head on Masashi’s shoulder while matching TB and listening to him chat with the police officer.

“Have you been recently busy?” Masashi thought that Maeda was thinner compared to the past.

“A little.” Maeda is the kind of man who doesn’t like to complain.

“Is it because of the recent traumatic events which were done by the Ripper?”

“So you know,” Maeda smiled bitterly.

“Although the TV, newspapers and other media was blocked not to report it by the police, it still spread on the internet.

“Brother, who’s the Ripper?” Kazumi asked with a puzzled look.

“I advise you not to know about it.”

“Why?”

“Because it will be very upsetting.”

“I still don’t understand.”

“Just ask Maeda about it.”

Kazumi looked at Maeda.

Maeda hesitated before saying: “In the 19th century London was once had a world-shaking incident, there was a man called Jack the Ripper, Ripper man translates to Jack the Ripper. In a very brutal way he cut open the belly of his ten victims. We just said that the case with the murderer’s approach was very similar to Jack, and therefore, called the Ripper events. So far there have been five victims.”

Half way through, Maeda saw Kazumi’s pale face and didn’t dare say anything anymore.

“I told you it’s a very upsetting thing. Are you alright?”



Kazumi shook her head and said: “If I knew I wouldn’t have asked, I’ll go talk to mom and see if she needs help...”

After Kazumi had walked away, Masashi asked Maeda: “Are there any clue?”

“Nothing, generally speaking, it looks like this serial murderer has special rules. Specifically, his behavior is the same with Jack the Ripper. The most obvious point is that the victims were all moderate or severe alcoholics, and were killed when they were drunk. The way this murderer committed crimes, excluding the techniques and being outside at night, is completely different to Jack. The victims had no relationship with the other victims. It seems the murderer kills randomly. That’s why we conclude that the killer may be a preliminary suffering from intermittent episodes of mental patients. Now we’re getting in touch with mental hospitals in Japan, to see if there’s anything.”

“Mental illness? Is there any special difference in comparison to Jack the Ripper?”

“There’s one very strange thing, although the victim’s internal organs are pulled out from the body, but it’s complete and undamaged. The whole body was also clean as stated by the forensic autopsy. That’s why there’s a reason to suspect that the killer had or is now engaged in the medical industry. It was also found that in the nasal cavity of each victim there was a chloroform aromatic residue and having no signs of struggle, so I believe that after the murderer killed the first victim with chloroform aromatic halo compounds makes them faint with no

pain. Therefore, we've lined up the possibility of revenge kill."

"Organs were pulled out of the body...." Masashi thought.

"Tomorrow can you send me a copy about the victim?"

"I'm sorry, I can't do that because the victim's information is confidential, I also have my own principles," Maeda told Masashi but began to regret about it.

Another death, Masashi cursed, but also appreciated the little man.

Masashi had no choice but to look at the calendar on the wall searching for something.

After a while, Masashi looked at Maeda and said: "Forget it, it turned out to be confidential, but remember, if the next victim is killed on the 20th of March, then come and call me."

"Why?"

"I'm not certain, just some speculation."

Maeda would like to ask about it, but seeing Rumiko and Kazumi holding a fruit out, he had to abort this topic.

## Chapter 35 - Transfer Student

---

At the subway entrance near the new home, Masashi, Kazumi as well as Rumi were waiting for the metro train to go to school.

It is worth noting that, in order to take care that confused little girl, Masashi proposed Rumi to also move. Thus, under the acquiescence of Rumiko, Rumi joyfully moved into Masashi's new home. Also, to avoid trouble, Masashi told Rumi that, if anyone ask, just tell Rumiko was her distant relative, and now temporarily lives here. Although this reason is a bit far-fetched and some say it's a bit too late, it's better than nothing.

The school had been almost two months. At the end of this semester, the third-grade students will be having exams. Therefore, some eager students began to, in their spare time, enroll in evening classes. Moreover, unknowingly, Masashi discovered that, his other classmate, who became a lover, were unceasingly increasing. More and more people started playing kissy-hugging each other after class. As the rumors of so and so boyfriend and girlfriend went to a hotel gradually getting numbed. Among girls, there is a strange view that, if in three years of high school still a virgin, it will be a shameful thing.

This degree of openness made Masashi tongue-tied.

However, this is also a no wonder. Everywhere in Tokyo, one can buy an adult film. The proliferation of adult entertainment in this metropolis make it nearly impossible if one wants to cultivate one own's moral.

“Brother, what are you wondering about, quickly eat your food.” Kazumi was unhappy. Today she especially cooked his favorite dish. But he actually was just looking in a daze.

“Oh, good.” Masashi, seeing, from the side, Kazumi was eating with gusto, cannot help but scoff: “You can still eat this every day, but why you look like someone who was just being released (from a prison).”

“Was just being released?” Rumi asked with eyes wide open.

“Don’t mind him, if it’s delicious, eat more.” Kazumi gave him a look.

“Kid, you can be happy; You had a backer now,” Masashi said and then stretched his chopstick to clamp a shrimp.

“Hey, that’s my shrimp. Kazumi, senior bullied me.” Rumi pitifully looked at her.

Kazumi, to appease the little girl, said: “Brother, you are getting less and less decent.”

“If I want to be decent, that’s easy. Merely, to be decent is too tiring. Better to let nature takes its course.” Masashi said while eating his lunch.

“I heard there was a new transfer student that came to your class today?” Kazumi asked Masashi.

“How do you know?”

“I’ve heard from other people about this. I heard that he was a stud. Moreover, he came to school driving a luxury car. Strange, why such a person wanted to come to our school?”

“Maybe his family just went bankrupt and maybe tomorrow he will take a subway to go to school,” Masashi said.

“Oh, bitchy much? Money is not a crime.”

No matter what was said, I think the guy is a bit odd.”

“Did I just hear a bit of jealousy in there? A handsome face, well-off family, and sitting in a luxury car, were simply the attributes of a modern-day prince charming. This, indeed, could make other people jealous. It turns out, brother, is also one of those mediocre people.” Kazumi grinningly said.

“Although it’s not easy to become like that, I will not bore myself to be jealous to a second-generation rich people like that. But the little devils in the class actually seems to take a notice of him. It seems like, before long, some people will get him into trouble.”

“Maybe people are like that. They cannot tolerate people who are better than themselves.” Kazumi sighed.

“Why would you suddenly turned this into a human philosophy. Quickly eat your dinner. Look at Rumi, all day eating, making her fat with happiness.”

“Who’s the fat one? You think I am a pig? Senior is too hateful.” Rumi made a threatening gesture; She seemed like she can pounce on him at any moment.

“Even if a pig come at me, I can still catch her.” Masashi’s eyes were filled with laughter.

Rumi desperately struggled to stop herself from pouncing on him. She gnashed her teeth.

Kazumi, unalarmed by the strange sight, didn’t bother to deal with them. She slowly drank her tea.

Before the lunch break is over, Masashi wanted to return to the class to take a nap.

“Hello, you are schoolmate Gennai Masashi right?”

A boy came over. He is the transfer student that was just being talked about by the Gennai siblings.

“I am Gennai Masashi, do you have something to tell me?”

“Schoolmate Masashi is very famous, so I want to get to know

him,” Nagasaki said with a face full of smiles.

“You flatter me. If everything is alright, I want to take a nap. Excuse me.”

“Schoolmate Masashi seems to have no favorable impression toward me.” Nagasaki followed up.

“You guess right. I don’t have any good impression on you.”

“Can you tell me why?” Nagasaki showed a very interested smile.

“I hate a man who put on perfume.”

The transfer student laugh, “You hate me just for this reason?”

“To like a person, one can have thousands of reasons. But one reason is enough to hate a man.”

“Brilliant theory. However, I am still very interested in schoolmate Masashi.”

“I’m sorry, I don’t have that kind of tendency.” After saying that, he walked back to his seat.

Nagasaki didn’t follow up this time. He just looked at Masashi with a strange smile.

Masashi had a profound feeling that the present high school students are generally quite bold.

For a month, almost everyday Nagasaki received confessions or love letters from female students. But the transfer student's attitude seemed like a clean sweep. He appeared to welcome all of them. He always gentles to the great extent to every girl that confess to him. Though not specifically accepted or rejected the confession, his ambiguous talk made each girl that confess to him secretly pleased, believing the opposite party has an interest in them.

Because there were so many people that confess to him, it created a storm of jealousy. There are even two girls who fight in public.

Since there was such a beautiful scenery in Nagasaki, the other boys who were without girlfriends looked even more pathetic. Finally, several students who have serious psychological imbalance began to look for an excuse to trouble him.

But after looking at Nagasaki's bodyguard, they no longer dared to appear in front of him.

"Human is a very poor creature, wouldn't you say, schoolmate Masashi?" Nagasaki's left hand propped his chin and smiled at Masashi.

"Including you?"



“If possible, I really don’t wish to become a human.”

“It’s not too late now. This is the third floor. If you went down head first, you would soon be able to achieve your desire.”

“You mean you told me to die? It turns out classmate Masashi really hated me. It truly makes me sad.”

Masashi really can’t stand this guy.

“You apparently likes to see other people badly beaten in their strive to gain something. Is it really interesting?” Masashi asked.

“So you can see it.” Nagasaki smiled as if he just succeeded in grabbing a toy from a baby, “Don’t you think it’s funny? You don’t need to say anything or do anything, and those girls will come scurrying like a mouse in front of you. And the boys will jealous as hell toward you. What could be more fun than these?”

“You really should record these words of yours, and let them listen to it. You really are a disgusting guy.”

“On the contrary, my impression of you is really good. I really like classmate Masashi. You are completely different than these people. I really like seeing your angry appearance. It’s very interesting.”

Masashi has no intention to continue this without nutrition dialogue. He stood up and left his seat.

Nagasaki smiled at his departure.

## Chapter 36 - Evidence

---

Masashi leisurely strolled to the playground and saw two physical education classes. At the far away, a girl, who wore pitcher uniform with a cap, stood on the pitcher spot. Her teammates were all boys.

Masashi thought this was interesting, so he sat on the lawn on the edge of the field to see her throw the ball.

Rumi is not that used to make up the number of pitchers. Because of the long-term strenuous exercise, her body was a lot better than the average boys. Every time she threw the ball, it was fast and accurate, and not at all inferior to boys. And after her opponents make three strikes, she then screamed with excitement, just like the boys.

This is what Masashi appreciates the most. Her eyes were clear just like her state of mind.

When other girls were busily buying cosmetics, all kinds of ornament necklaces, or constantly looking for a new boyfriend, her only pastimes were limited to buying some snacks after school and, after dinner, dragged Rumiko and them to watch some boring series. On the holidays, unlike other girls who likes to go shopping, she stays at home to practice her kendo.

With her at home, she was insulated from the average person's so-called nightlife. Masashi never saw her go to sleep beyond 11 o'clock.

The things that many girls are more interested in, such as flower arranging, gymnastic, swimming, and other rhythm sports activities, were rarely participated by her. Apart from making tea, she prefers to play baseball like a boy, climbing the tree, catching fishes, and that's without mentioning her kendo.

Every so often, she was like a hyperactive child. Telling her the proper conduct of a Lady was meaningless.

When playing almost half of the class time, Rumi finally saw Masashi on the sideline. Like a puppy that just saw its owner, she immediately ran over excitedly.

“Senior, why are you here?” The running girl's long ponytail was unceasingly flying upward.

“I am also a student here, why can't I be here?” Masashi revealed his crafty smile.

“I am not asking this. Don't you have a class? You're not skipping a class are you?” The girl looked worried and asked.

“That's right. However, I'm really sorry. There's no prize for you.” Masashi said with a sloppy look.

“Senior!” Rumi loudly shouted.

Masashi rubbed his ears as he said, “Okay, don’t be so loud, I know what you want to say. However, I already skipped the classes. It doesn’t matter anymore.”

“Don’t you have the awareness for an introspection?” Rumi’s anger subsided.

“Don’t be too serious, ok? I just skipped several classes. It’s not as if I’m a convicted criminal or something.” Masashi, feeling wronged, said.

“What skipped ‘just several class?’ I already asked Kazumi, you almost skipped half the classes this semester. If you go on like this, you’re going to be my junior in school.”

“What are you afraid of? As long as I pass the exams, that’s enough. Do you doubt your senior’s ability?” Masashi pushed up his sleeve to show his aspiration.

But the girl’s expression made her greatly discouraged.

“Fine, you won. I’m going back to class. Go away, you little rascal.” Masashi backed away as he beckoned his hand.

“Senior, you must try hard.” Rumi lifted up her hands to gesture her encouragement.

Masashi could not help but laugh, shook his head and walked away.

After making a turn, Masashi looked back to ascertain that noisy kid didn't see him. He then went to the school's back door fence and quietly crawled up."

"Truly, without Tiger in the mountain, monkey became the king. All the class' subjects are hard; they really want me to die early." Masashi smiled bitterly as he climbed.

After several dull and average days, one afternoon, Masashi returned to the classroom from the outside.

When he just came in, he saw the guidance teacher was also inside. Many students were discussing something in whisper.

"Hey, what's happening?" Masashi patted a boy on the shoulder and asked.

"Oi, it's Masashi. He came back." That student turned his head to see Masashi and suddenly called out.

Everyone immediately looked over.

He did not like this looking at a monkey look.

"Classmate Masashi, come here for a moment." The speaker was the guidance teacher.

“What’s the matter, teacher?” Seeing Misato Kazuo was hiding behind the guidance teacher, Masashi knew that this is probably not a good thing.

“Have you ever seen this Parker pen?” The guidance teacher pulled out a golden Parker pen in front of Masashi.

“Never seen this.”

“This morning, classmate Kazuo reported to me that he lost a pure gold Parker pen. So I come to the classroom to help him find it. Later on, when checking the student’s school-bags, his lost pen was found in your drawer. Can you explain why this pen was inside your drawer?”

“Oh, there is such a thing? I’m also curious. Classmate Kazuo, can you help me explain why your pen was in my drawer?” Masashi sneeringly looked at Misato Kazuo.

“I, I don’t know anything about it....” Misato Kazuo didn’t dare to look at Masashi.

“Classmate Masashi, I am now asking you, don’t ask classmate Kazuo. Please answer my question immediately.” The guidance teacher kept a straight face.

“To caught a man fornicating in bed is to catch his dirty secret, what else could I say.” Masashi shrugged.

“Is that a confession? Then do you admit on stealing classmate Misato Kazuo’s pen?”

“You’re the one who said these words. I didn’t admit such a thing. While I was away, you go through my stuff, and then said I stole something, what else could I say? Besides, have you seen a thief so idiot like this? Having stolen something but did not hide it well. Forget it. It’s useless anyway. However you want to deal with it, just deal it.” Masashi had a dead pig who is not afraid of boiling water appearance.

“You...., fine, I’ll immediately report this to the principal. You just wait!” The guidance teacher was shaking with anger.

Misato Kazuo did not dare to stay behind and followed to run behind the guidance teacher.

As the two men left, Nagasaki sighed, “Classmate Masashi, I didn’t know you could do such a thing. If you have a problem, just say it, we will certainly help you. You really let me down.”

Looking at Nagasaki’s performance and the contempt for other people eyes, Masashi could not help but laugh. He never thought that one day he could be a leading role in a third-rate script.

Staying in class is without meaning anymore, better to just skip the school.

When he was getting out of the door, Masashi suddenly turned to



Nagasaki and said: “This script is so bad, and the actors suck. It’s a very boring show. It seems like your taste is also mediocre. A kid is a kid after all, still wanted to pretend to be mature; Only suitable to play a cheap trick at this level.” He said these as he shook his head to go out.

“Humph, what an attitude. Having caught stolen thing, but still so arrogant.” A boy cursed.

“Unexpectedly Masashi is such a person. I honestly can’t see it coming.”

“I don’t know what would be the reaction of Nagakawa Rumi when she hear about this incident.” A boy excitedly said.

“What else, they’re bound to break up.”

“Really? But, if this happens to me, I will also do it.”

“Classmate Nagasaki, what’s wrong? Are you feeling unwell?” A female student, seeing Nagasaki’s pale face, concernedly said.

“I’m fine, Thank you.” He answered in disgust.

“Classmate Nagasaki, are you angry?”

“Nothing to do with you.” The transfer student gritted his teeth, turned around and walked back to his seat.

‘Gennai Masashi, I will make you regret about what you say today.’ Nagasaki gloomily said in his heart.

## Chapter 37 - Bet

---

The case was quickly processed. Considering that Masashi has previously rendered a meritorious service by chasing a robber, and this was also his first offense, the school gave him a demerit penalty.

Facing such result, Masashi just yawned and walked away.

Although Masashi was relatively indifferent, Rumi's reaction was much more intense. If not for Kazumi, who held her back, she would have taken her bamboo sword down to the Principal's office.

“Brother, what are you going to do? If this punishment doesn't get canceled before the graduation, it will affect the high school last exams.”

“Relax, from now on, as long as I don't do any serious offenses, this punishment will generally be canceled before graduation.” Seeing Kazumi was so worried, Masashi tried to comfort her.

“Is that true?”

“Of course it's true.” To be honest, Masashi didn't really want this matter to be over. He didn't even want to go to college.

In his view, University is a place where one further one's study. It's better just to skip classes, chasing girls and eat them, all the

way until graduation. That's his ideal scenario.

Today, Masashi has accumulated four or five Engineering, Biological, and Medical Doctor Postgraduate diploma. Although each country has a different name on the diploma. Moreover, the years were also separated across several centuries.

“Brother, why would that Misato Kazuo frame you like this?” Kazumi leaned on Masashi's shoulder and asked.

“He is nothing more than an extra. The Director is someone else. I'm just a bit curious about why would that fellow took his aim at me.”

“Who are you talking about?” Kazumi looked up at him.

“Soon you will know.” Masashi smiled.

“You didn't tell mom about this did you?”

“Of course not. I had also told Rumi, asking her not to speak out.”

“That little rascal is not reliable. Right, where is she now?”

“Already asleep. She probably got too tired today.

Remembering the way Rumi sought justice for him today, Masashi couldn't help but smile.

When he went back to school, all the people who knew him looked at him with all kinds of vision.

Faced with those people's eyes, Masashi went on his way, as usual, to read comic and dozing off, relaxed and carefree, making other people jealous.

What made the boys indignant was, that kendo girl, Nagakawa Rumi's attitude toward him was still the same as before. Not a single outsider's rumor of the so-called breakup. Moreover, in order to keep Masashi from skipping class again, she would come to visit the class after each lesson.

However, regarding this treatment that makes other boys endlessly envy and hate, the person involved incessantly complained.

Admonition, persuasion, pleading, swearing, lying....As long as there's a method, Masashi would use it. But the always obedient Rumi has unusually persistent regarding this matter. She even shed tears for this, making Masashi can only oblige and submit.

This feeling is the same as when one go looking for a stepmother. Masashi can only face upward and took a deep sigh.

“Kazumi, go try to persuade Rumi. If this continues, I will

suffocate.” Masashi can only wish for her, in addition to Rumiko, to be able to manage this stubborn little girl.

Seeing her brother showed a century rare tragic expression, Kazumi secretly laugh.

“Isn’t this good? Brother ought to appreciate Rumi’s painstaking effort.”

The nearby Rumi fiercely nodded. She looked very proud of herself.

Masashi angrily looked and can’t help but knocked her down.

“Ah! Kazumi, senpai bully me again.” Rumi held her head and hid behind Kazumi.

“Brother, stop it. Rumi did what she did, because of your own good.” Kazumi gently stroked her head.

“I know she is good to me. But do you think I’m the type of person who would quietly sit and listen to other people’s lecture?”

“Every day wants me to sit down motionlessly, making me easily gets hemorrhoid. I’m tired of it and bored to death, like being imprisoned. Do you want to take my life?”

“But there’s no other way. Who told senpai to have messy results

like these? If you skip classes, it's very likely that you will fail a grade." Rumi couldn't resist opening her mouth.

"Cut, I thought it was something else. It's actually just about the test score."

"How about this, we take a bet. When I take the semester final exams, if my results are within top ten performances, later on, you must not interfere with my freedom again. In contrast, if I lose, I'll listen to anything that you'll say. What do you think?"

"The thing that senpai said is it true? Your results will be within top ten performances. I didn't mishear that, right? Rumi looked straight at him.

"Top ten performances in school, what's so hard about that? If I'm in a good mood, even top ten among all schools will not be a problem for me." Masashi's tone of voice was like someone ordering food at a restaurant.

"Brother, you mean the top ten lowest performances right?" Kazumi covered her mouth to smile.

"It turned out to be like this. Fortunately, Kazumi brings this out. Otherwise, I would let senpai cheat me." Rumi suddenly enlightened.

Masashi scoffed, "Do you think I would be so bored as to play word games with you? Listen carefully, I will be among the top ten

performances within all schools. If I could not achieve this standard, I lose. If I win, you can't interfere with my freedom again. Moreover, later on, both of you have to listen to me. If I told you to do something you must do that something..”

“This is not my problem, the one who take the bet with you is only Rumi.” Kazumi said with a grin.

“Don't you have any loyalty?” Masashi's spirit dropped.

“Ok, senpai, I'll take that bet.” Rumi simply said.

“Then it's a deal. Before the test, you must not interfere with my freedom. In other words, you can't come to my class and monitor me every day.”

“No way!” Rumi immediately rejected.

“Why not? You don't understand, my learning method is different from an ordinary person. I must take a walk outside to relax my body and mind once in awhile, so I can settle down to read. If you don't let me out, it will seriously affect my performance. You're harming me instead of helping me.” Masashi righteously said.

“For real?” Rumi started to waver.

“Of course it's real.” Masashi didn't back his words with an oath.



Rumi looked at Kazumi and saw that she seemed not to have any opinion. Rumi hesitated, but finally nodded her head, “Alright then. But senpai, you mustn’t lie to me.”

Masashi was all smile as he patted her on the shoulder to assure her.

The nearby Kazumi didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. Only a pure girl like Rumi would believe Masashi’s set of nonsense. However, she was also very curious to know if Masashi would really achieve his target.

“Well then, I’m going to go out and relax. When I’m back, I will immediately start the assiduous learning.” After holding himself back for a long time, Masashi, appreciating this valuable freedom, hurriedly run away.

Just when he passed the school gate, Masashi impatiently made a call.

“Little Hei, are you busy recently? Oh, not busy? That’s great. Quickly fly over here, this father just left the prison. Come here to celebrate for this father. Enough, you don’t need to ask anymore, in short just get over here. Remember to take a few bottles of nice wine. His grandma, I haven’t been this carefree for a long time.”

Rumi was in a daze as she looked at Masashi, who seemed to escape from something.

“Kazumi, Senpai seemed impatient, what do you think happens to him?” She looked at Kazumi with bewildered look.

“Pfft!” Kazumi finally couldn’t hold back her laugh.

“What?”

Watching Rumi’s blank look, Kazumi even more unable to hold back her laugh.

“Rumi, can you tell me, why would you insist brother not to skip classes?” Kazumi managed to quell her intense desire to smile.

“Because I fear senpai would fail a grade because of the repeated lack of attendance.”

“Then, why would you fear for him to fail a class?” Kazumi was very interested in this.

Rumi slowly sat down in front of Kazumi, and then softly said: “To me, senpai is a very important person. From the start, I always call him senpai. This title has a very special meaning. Other than him, I would never call another person with this title. In my mind, senpai is him, he is my senpai. If senpai fails a grade, he would be in the same grade as me. By then, to call him senpai would be inappropriate. I don’t want that. Therefore, I must guard this title for senpai.” The slightly stoic tone showed the unique perseverance of this young girl.

Kazumi gently looked at her, and then, after a while, suddenly sighed faintly, “I really envy you, Rumi. Unfortunately, I’m just his sister.”

Rumi looked at her, puzzled.

“However, this time, you might lose.” Kazumi restored her bright smile.

“How could that possible, this is the school’s top ten. As long as senpai performed better than his last semester, I would be very satisfied.”

“Rumi, you underestimate him. I have a feeling that a lot of things are not impossible for him. It’s just that he doesn’t want to do it. Maybe he doesn’t want to publicize his abilities. He is a guy who is impossible to see through.” Kazumi looked at far away places, lost in thought.

## Chapter 38 - Far From Home

---

Arriving at the agreed bar, Masashi didn't see Rei Li. When he was about to make a phone call, a man suddenly bumped into him. When he turned to look, it was actually a young man covered in alcohol smell.

"I'm sorry, Sir. The man was drunk." A waiter came up and propped up the young man.

"Leave me alone...." That drunken youth pushed the waiter, then lying motionlessly on the bar.

Seeing he didn't make any more trouble, the waiter dared not to wake him up. Masashi nodded his head and left.

The funny thing is, when the waiter left, the young man woke up. He opened his mouth and shouted about wanting a liquor. The bartender had no choice but to bring one glass of beer to him.

That youth lied there drinking while his finger flailed heedlessly. He also shouted loudly once in awhile.

Masashi was upset by his noise, so he stood up and left.

"Sir, do you want to leave? Your wine is ready." The bartender was a bit embarrassed to look at him.

“Give it to this guy. Let him have a good drink.” Masashi readily paid the bill.

“What a strange man.” When Masashi had left, the bartender glanced at that drunken young man who was already unconscious and said to himself.

After leaving the bar, Masashi didn't give a call. But just walking around following the street. After a few blocks, Masashi came to a junction and then nonchalantly enter a Citroen car.

“Mr. Gennai, hallo.” A voice from the man at the front seat suddenly resounded.

“Drive.” Masashi lightly said.

“Yes.” The man immediately started the car.

After about half an hour, the car arrived at a nondescript two storey house.

“Mr. Gennai, the boss is in the house.” The man said to Masashi after he opened the car door.

“Thank you, you've worked hard.” When Masashi saw the man's face, it was way younger than he imagined.

After that youth had bowed to Masashi, he drove away the car.

Masashi knocked the door bell and, after a while, with a “squeak” sound, the door automatically opened. He went inside without a pause.

On the corridor, there was only a very small energy-saving lamp. Under this dim lightning, the room was very spooky.

‘This is actually a perfect place for a ghost.’ Masashi smiled.

In the dark, a middle-aged man came. “Mr. Gennai, the boss is waiting for you in the study room, please walk with me.”

Masashi nodded and followed him.

“Mr. Gennai, the boss is inside, please go ahead. If there’s nothing else, please excuse me,” then he bowed and quietly walked away.

Masashi knocked on the door, opened it and went in.

“Master, you finally came.” Rei Li, who wear casual sportswear, was pleased to see Masashi and came over to welcome him.

“You used a secret code to bring me here. It looks like you don’t have much free time as you said on the telephone.” Masashi sat in a chair, picked up a cup on the table and took a sip.

Rei Li embarrassedly scratched his head a bit.

“Well then, tell me what happened?”

Rei Li straight-facedly said: “Master, we were ambushed.”

“Who’s the opponent?”

“I don’t know.”

“You don’t know the other party?”

Rei Li smiled wryly, “I really don’t know. Half a month ago, the Black Dragon bases in Manhattan, Texas, Seattle and several other positions were attacked simultaneously, killing nearly three hundred. I only know that the opposite party is a group of men in black with face cover.”

“Their skills were good, with excellent weapons. These many people with many guns unexpectedly can’t be caught even for just one person.”

“The most annoying one is: That group of people was completely crazy. Everyone of them has been bundled with high explosives. So long as one of them were sieged, they will immediately detonate the bomb. Many people died because of these suicide bomb. His grandma, I’ve never seen a perverted killer like these. They were basically a terrorist. Moreover, they came in batches. Really terrible.”

“What are the respond from the other gang?”

“Those grandsons were ready to make trouble. But for now, they dared not act unreasonably. Afterall, this sneak attack didn't hurt the power basis of the Black Dragon. I have deployed extra manpower as a reinforcement in case there's an attack on the stronghold. Chang'an already there. As long as the similar thing do not occur, there should be no problem. It's just that, a day went by without eliminating those crowd of men in black, there'll be no peace.

“Could it be that your intelligence section doesn't even have any findings yet?”

“The strangest thing is, it stands to reason that with many skilled people like them, they should've have brought attention to other people. But after searching every way and all over the black and white road, there's not even a single clue about those people. They seemed to appear out of nowhere. It's incredible.”

Masashi lowered his head to think for a long time, “You continue to investigate this matter. Moreover, I need you to bring me the video recording of the attack on the branches and the blood samples of these Men in Black.

“What blood samples?” Rei Li was a bit puzzled.

“The remains of those Men in Black that was killed in the wreck. Such as blood, meat, bones, and the likes. The more complete, the



better. But be careful to distinguish between the remains of our people. Don't put our own people into the mix."

Rei Li nodded, "But Master, what do you want with these things?"

"I have some bad feelings, and need to do some research."

"Then I'll inform Chan'An, asking him to send those stuff. The videos would be no problem. I just hope he won't be so quick to put those corpses burned." ReiLi said as he took a satellite phone to dial up.

---

"Kazumi, do you know when senpai will come back?" Rumi asked as she opened the lunch box.

"Probably within a few days."

"Senpai is really, suddenly said he must go to Guam, and then went for a week. But he only made 2-3 phone calls, making people worried to death. Kazumi, do you know why would Senpai go there?"

"Didn't he already say that? He's going to do something for a friend. Don't worry. He'll be back soon." Kazumi handed her a cup of tea.

Rumi nodded her head, and slowly eating her lunch.

‘Is brother really went to Guam? But I clearly noticed he is also bringing his passport. Why would he need a passport to Guam?’ Kazumi was a bit worried.

“Kazumi, why don’t you eat, are you feeling unwell?”

“It’s nothing,” Kazumi smiled and opened her lunch box.

After the lunch, the two of them returned to their classrooms. When passing the corridor, they saw the transfer student Nagasaki was being surrounded by several female students.

“I’m sorry, excuse me.” Nagasaki also saw them, smiled and walked away from that group of female students.

“Kazumi, Rumi, good afternoon. Unexpectedly we happen to meet again.”

“This is a small place. It’s not a big deal if we happen to run across each other once in awhile.” Kazumi dismissively said.

“Mr. Nagasaki, hello.” Although Kazumi relatively indifferent, Rumi appeared courteous.

“Rumi, have you had your lunch? Can you accompany me to have

lunch outside?”

“I’m sorry, Mr. Nagasaki, I already had my lunch.”

“If that’s so, then so be it. Oh right, I have two tickets for a movie tonight, are you interested in accompanying me to see it?” The words of Nagasaki caused a commotion among the girls. So far, the transfer student has not officially invited a girl to a dinner or a movie.

Rumi used her vision to seek help from Kazumi.

“I’m sorry, Rumi only likes TV soap opera. You better ask someone else. Rumi, let’s go,” Kazumi took the lead with a cool expression.

Rumi act like a rabbit under the gaze of Nagasaki and quickly left to follow Kazumi.

“Interesting.” Nagasaki watched their back with a faint smile on his face. He casually threw the movie tickets into the trash can.

“Rumi, be careful of this Nagasaki person. I think that fellow is not a good person.” Kazumi said as they walked side by side.

Hearing Kazumi’s evaluation, Rumi could not help but laugh.

“What are you laughing at, I’m serious. Little fool like you; As

long as the other side is a man, they will surely want to eat you.”

“Kazumi, your speech is getting more and more like senpai. You two are worthy to be brother and sister.” Rumi said with a smile.

Kazumi was mad.

# Chapter 39 - Pursuit

---

After the second class in the afternoon, a female outside was looking at Rumi.

“Rumi, someone’s looking for you outside.”

“Excuse me, were you looking for me?” Rumi ran up to the girl outside and asked.

“You’re Nagakawa Rumi, right? Follow me. Someone wants to see you.” The girl looked at Rumi with an intense gaze.

“Could you tell me who wants to see me?”

“You don’t need to know who, just come with me.” The girl was very impatient.

Rumi lowered her head to think for a moment, “I’ll have to trouble you.”

“Come with me.” Seeing that Rumi was polite, the girl’s attitude gradually changed.

The girl led Rumi to a classroom near a lawn behind the school building. Arriving there, Rumi noticed the five girls that were standing there obviously waiting for someone.

“Here she is.” The girl who brought Rumi said something to those girls.

“You’re Nagakawa Rumi?” A tall girl spoke first.

“I am Nagakawa Rumi, why were you looking for me?”

The girls carefully looked at Rumi from head to toe, “Pfft, I thought that she was a great beauty, but turns out she’s just a little girl. I can’t understand why Nagasaki schoolmate likes this little rascal.”

“Sorry, I don’t understand what you mean.”

“Bumbling kid you must be proud of yourself, right? But don’t think Nagasaki schoolmate really like you small girl, he just wants to have fun with you.

I’m warning you. You better not show yourself in front of Nagasaki again. Otherwise, we won’t let you off.” She slapped fast towards Rumi.

Rumi never thought that she would suddenly strike at her, but fortunately, Rumi she has trained in kendo for many years gave her outstanding reflexes. Gently stepping back, a hand flashed.

“What are you doing?” Recovering perfectly, Rumi loudly shouted.

“We just wanted to teach you the 38 rules you don’t understand. Since you like to seduce men, you should just take your clothes off. I think there would be a lot of men who would like it.” The girl who brought her squinted her eyes and said.

“You, don’t fool around.” Rumi went closer towards them alarming the five girls.

“Regret your stupidity.” The tall girl sneered.

Rumi thought that these people were crazy, “Don’t want .....

---

After hearing Rumi’s voice, thinking that something happened, Kazumi immediately ran out of the classroom.

In the Teacher’s lounge, a pale-faced Rumi can be seen.

“Kazumi!” At the sight of her, Rumi threw her arms and immediately burst into tears.

Seeing the little girl cry, Kazumi, who already regarded Rumi as her little sister felt as if a knife pierced her heart.

“What happened?” Kazumi with full of hatred looked at the teachers.

A teacher smiled bitterly, “I don’t know what exactly happened, but after Rumi had gone out, there were some students who wanted to bully her. They even wanted to take off her clothes....”

“What?” Hearing this, Kazumi wanted to kill those guys.

“Rumi, rest assured, it’s alright now.” Kazumi closely grasped the little child, while tears silently fell.

The teachers didn’t know what to say, scratching his head, a teacher spoke: “Let me finish....”

Seeing Kazumi ignore him, he proceeded: “They wanted to do something, but the result was that they were all knocked out and are now in the infirmary.”

Kazumi was surprised for a moment, and looked up at him, “Who did that?”

The teacher smiled again and immediately pointed at Rumi, who was still weeping.

“What, Rumi was the one who took them out?” Kazumi thought that they got it wrong.

“Really, when they were about to take off her clothes, Rumi suddenly rose, and immediately after, the six girls scattered and



were knocked down to the ground. Now they're all being treated in the infirmary."

Kazumi couldn't believe it and looked at the girl in her arms.

"Rumi, Rumi, don't cry, is what the teacher said true, they didn't do anything to you?" Kazumi lowered her head to ask Rumi.

The little girl looked up, revealing red eyes caused by her tears. "Ah, they were very terrible. They said I ..... Seduced a man, they wanted to take off my clothes."

Kazumi was relieved. This incident almost made her scared to death.

"How did you knock them out, did you have your bamboo sword in hand?" After a while, Kazumi began to wonder how Rumi knocked down the six people.

"Senior taught me. He taught me that the hand is like a sword, and the sword is like a hand. Although I can't do the sword like a hand, making it flexible and comfortable, the hand like a sword is not that hard. He said, after learning kendo for so many years, if the person can only use it in games, then the person might as well go out the street holding a melon knife to injure four punks. I used my hands as it was a sword and knocked them down." Mentioning Masashi, Rumi immediately became spirited.

Kazumi had a sudden burst of headache, thinking, 'that guy

actually taught her some bad things.'

"Well, all right, then let's go. You really made me scared." Kazumi took out her handkerchief to wipe the girl's face.

"Kazumi, Do you think that they'll no longer come after me?" Rumi asked a little worried.

"I don't think those six would dare go and cause trouble for you again," Kazumi said with a smile.

Rumi's face turned red while listening to her.

Sure enough, from that day, never had anyone come to find trouble with Rumi. She even saw those women hiding from her.

As for the culprit of the event Nagasaki, still pursued Rumi. Every day he would invite her to dinner, ask her to see a movie, and even sent her flowers or snacks. This made the surrounding girls felt jealous, and the boys resented him.

Faced with the transfer student's enthusiasm made Kazumi more cautious. His academic performance was good with excellent organizational skills. This made many people shocked while the transfer student smirked.

"Kazumi, is senior not coming back yet? It's been half a month already." Rumi said in frustration.

“Rest assured, he’ll be back soon.” This sentence was what Kazumi said almost every day. Actually, she also felt uneasy, feeling as if her nerves would erode.

‘Brother, hopefully, nothing happened to you.’ She thought.

“Rumi tonight what do you want to eat, how about beef?” Kazumi deliberately changed the subject.

“Whatever is good.” Rumi was still a little absent minded.

Seeing this, Kazumi put her hand around her shoulder and said: “Rest assured, my brother will come back soon, this isn’t like the usual Rumi that I know.”

“Ah, I know.” Rumi nodded

Kazumi smiled, took her hand and continued walking towards the supermarket.

Not far away from them, a luxury car was parked. A handsome boy holding a telescope looked at the two girls from his car’s window.

“Inform them to begin.”

“Young master, do you really want to do this? If people found

out, it will give some implications to the family name.” Said a middle-aged housekeeper carefully.

“Well, what reputation are you talking about?”

“Master .....

“Just do what I say, notify them quickly.” The youth said impatiently.

“Yes, sir.” The butler had no choice but to call obediently.

“Bitch, I didn’t want to do this, but you forced me.” The youth facing the window sneered.

# Chapter 40 - Besiege

---

“What do you want?” Kazumi coldly said.

When the two of them walked into an intersection, from the front, several men suddenly came to stop them.

“Nothing, we just want to ask you to play with us.” A bleached blond teen smilingly came.

“If you come forward again, I’ll call the police?” Kazumi took out her mobile phone as if she was ready to call.

“Call the police? Ah, it seems you’re too late.” That blond youth clapped his hand, and a few people came out from behind the corner. In addition to the four people in front of them, the two girls were surrounded by seven people. They have no path to escape.

Kazumi pulled Rumi behind her, and staring at the blond haired youth as she said, “Who sent you to do this?”

The dyed youth and a very sturdy youth looked at each other for a moment and then said: “The woman is too smart, too bad you’re unable to marry. Don’t resist, obediently come with us so you will suffer a bit less. I haven’t come across such a pretty little sister like you. Perhaps you will later change your mind and think that playing with us turn out to be interesting.” This dyed man wretchedly looked at the beautiful girl behind Kazumi and, along with the several other men, started to smile obscenely.

“Rumi, wait for me to distract them, you immediately rush out and do not look back. You hear me?” Kazumi whispered to the beautiful girl behind her.

“Then what about you? We go together!”

“You have to listen to me, after you run, immediately call the police. Otherwise, we can’t run away.” Kazumi tightly squeezed her hand.

Without waiting for Rumi’s reply, Kazumi said to the dyed youth: “I will go with you, but you have to let her go.”

That blond youth laughed, “You think we were going to be so easy and let her go?”

“Since this is the case, then go to hell....” Kazumi suddenly pounded her bag toward the youth who stood on her left.

That young man was hit by the bag on the corner of his eyes and screamed.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, Kazumi pulled Rumi and ran away through that gap.

But she can’t even run even a few steps because Rumi has been pulled from behind.

“Ya!”

“Ah!”

Two voices sounded at the same time. The frightened Kendo girl reflexively hand knifed a youth on the middle bridge of his nose. The dyed youth who pulled her hair immediately spurted out nosebleed.

Although they solved one obstacle, they were slowed down, making the people behind them soon caught up.

“Damn, seize these two girls. We’re going to play with them.” The dyed youth covered his nose and cursed.

“Kazumi, quickly go.” Rumi kicked another youth who rushed to them.

Kazumi watched the few people that were rushing to her, looked at Rumi, gritted her teeth and tried to run away.

“Quickly catch that woman.” A burly looking youth shouted.

Seemingly responding to his words, several men suddenly rushed from the opposite of her and blocked Kazumi in the middle of the road.

Kazumi's heart cooled down, knowing that she has no way to run.

“Brother....” Kazumi's eyes welled up with tears. She didn't dare to imagine the things that she and Rumi must face.

Just when Kazumi was in despair, that several men unexpectedly had rushed past her toward those several youth.

Since nobody caught her, Kazumi looked back and was surprised.

She saw an inconceivable scene. Those several men who came late unexpectedly fought with those youth.

“Who are you people...ah!” That dyed blond youth has not yet finished his words, but he was already kicked in the stomach by a man. His whole body was kicked two meters away and unable to get up again.

In just a half minute, except for the sturdy youth, all those youth were knocked to the ground by these men, screaming and moaning.

“Who the hell are you people?” Only the sturdy youth left standing. He was scared shitless.

His opponent is an ordinary man. But the man's move was ruthless, swift, and violent like he never saw it before. He thought that although he is dan three in Karate, he was suppressed by that



man and can't even fight back.

He felt cheated, the man who offer him this task said he only need to deal with a little Kendo girl. 'But where did these guys come from?' He wondered.

"Haven't finish yet? Your opponent is only a novice." A man carrying a sunglasses looked at the two people's fight.

"I am sorry, please give me some time." The man who fought with the sturdy youth said, as he accelerated his moves and increased his strength.

"Time is running out. You guys deal with him together." The man with sunglasses said to the several men who have nothing to do.

"How can you be like this!" Seeing that the six mysterious men have rushed to him, the sturdy youth screamed. He thought, 'Are these men really an expert? How could they use this gang up method on me.

This is the so-called strength in number. In less than ten seconds, that sturdy youth was beaten up by these several men flat into a pig. They even gave several kicks to his lifeblood (penis), making people wonder if he would ever be able to use it in the future.

"Clean up." The sunglasses man waved his hand. His men immediately poured and efficiently hauled those youth to the

nearby alley.

The two girls looked at this scene that was only possible in the movie. They wanted to run but unable to move their feet. In the end, they just stood watching this scene from the side.

“Who are you people?” Kazumi was first to recover and asked.

That sunglasses man heard Kazumi’s question, hesitated, and then came toward them.

“What do you want?” Because of their previous experience, the two girls, naturally, took a step back.

Just when they began to say that, this seemingly powerful man took off his sunglasses, and then bent over, bowing in front of them and said: “The two ladies were frightened.”

Kazumi and Rumi were startled at his respectful attitude.

“Thank, thank you. Can you tell me who are you guys? Why do you want to help us?” Kazumi managed to say these words with great difficulty.

“I am sorry, I can’t answer these questions. Please forgive me.”

Kazumi didn’t expect that the man answered her like this, gawked, saying: “No matter what, I am very grateful to you guys.”

With that, she bowed to salute that guy. Rumi, who stood behind her, followed suit.

“You are too kind. Since everything is alright, we will take our leave now.” After returning the courtesy, the man turned around to depart. The several men that came with him also left with him.

Not until those people completely disappeared did Kazumi breath a sigh of relieve. She suddenly felt her whole body weak and her feet trembling.

“Kazumi, according to you, why did those men want to help us?” Rumi walked several steps to picked up Kazumi’s bag.

“I don’t know.” Kazumi sighed.

If it weren’t for those men’s timely arrival, Kazumi really didn’t know what would become of her and Rumi. Thinking of this, Kazumi became scared again.

“Kazumi, let’s go home.” Rumi urged.

“Mm.” Seeing her pale face, Kazumi knew Rumi was frightened. She can’t help but took pity of her and held her hand.

In a scrap warehouse, the sunglasses man asked the man who wore a black coat: “Have you asked them about the one who incited them to do this?”

“They’ve all been questioned. All of their testimonies were consistent. In addition to the Karate kid, the other were just punks. They all said a middle-aged man in suit gave them money so they’ll deal with the two girls. As for the middle-aged man identity, we still try to check his background.”

“Be sure to find the identity of that middle-aged man as soon as possible. Moreover, immediately provide additional resources to protect the two girls as well as Mr. Gennai’s mother. You must not let them have any accident. When necessary, you can use the gun.”

“I understand. I will immediately notify the Headquarters for additional staff. What should I do with those punks?”

“Discard them all.”

“Yes.”

# Chapter 41 - Return

---

Around 8 am, as usual, Ai took the subway to go to school.

Ai is a very normal girl. She had good academic grades, scores in sport are not high but not low, and the dress she wore was nothing special.

Even though some elders often told her that she looked beautiful, no boy has still confessed to her. It might be because of her introverted personality, she thought.

Although she wasn't very concerned about such things, at heart still felt somewhat regretful.

Girls like her, if it's in the general public high school, she might be seen as a person with an outstanding appearance. But in a private high school, her appearance can be seen as common.

In the high school where most students had a very wealthy family, or a family in politics, there would still be a person from a small family to enter depending on their own academic grade. These people would usually be called a nerd; she can be considered a part of them.

She had planned to go to a general public high school and had never thought about going to a private high school. Because of her parent's high expectations, her father would even repeatedly make her continue reading.

She was dissatisfied with her school life. But so long as she can be admitted to a good university, she things would be alright.

She has a very good friend, called Aiko.

She wasn't jealous of her friend, but still felt very envious in her heart.

Cheerful, enthusiastic, popular, and lovely looks, plus a very good family. No matter where she would be the focus of everyone. In the annual Valentine's Day, she would receive countless chocolates. Countless of boys even confessed to her. This girl is maybe the so called the beloved child of God.

Even though she was unremarkable and an introverted person, she was still very lucky to find good friends. Although she felt that way, there would still be times when Aiko's brightness would make her feel a kind of burning sensation that can't adapt to her.

She was really annoyed, every day there would be so many people. Ai was then pushed to the side by a large group of people inside the train.

The train was still slowly moving forward. Thinking that there would be a quiz in English this morning, she took out her English textbooks from her bag, and quietly memorized the words.

Not long after, a man suddenly leaned over close to her back. Ai

wasn't familiar with the person, so she then moved forward a little bit to pull away from him

But the man immediately leaned up. Not only that, but the man also put his hand on her buttocks, gently using his two hands to grab it.

My God, it's a lecherous man. Ai was very scared. She immediately took another step forward, trying to keep away from him.

But the man immediately took a step in forward, but also relied on the critical situation.

In a panic, Ai took a step forward. But because there were too many people inside the train, she accidentally stepped on the man's foot. The man cursed: "Don't you have eyes?"

"Yes, I'm sorry." Ai was frightened by him.

People around heard the man's voice, turning their head and looked at them, then immediately looked away unconcerned.

"Don't you know my shoes are expensive? Look there's footprint on it. Damn kid!" The man still cursed.

"I'm sorry, really sorry....." Ai continued to bow towards him and begged for forgiveness.

Seeing this girl cry out, gave this middle-aged men pleasure.

“Well, be careful next time.” He didn’t want to make an event, so he waved his hand pretending to be generous.

“I’m really sorry.” Ai was relieved.

A small disturbance like this finished, making the atmosphere in the train peaceful.

Not long after the event was settled, the pervert again touched her buttocks with his hand.

Afraid of stepping on people Ai didn’t dare to move.

“I beg you, don’t do this.” Ai lowered her head down and whispered.

The pervert seemed to have heard her words, but not only didn’t he stop, but he also put his other hand around her waist, slowly moving towards her chest.

“.....Don’t. I beg you.....” Ai put her head down and wept. Fearing the some people might hear, she bit her lip afraid of making a sound.

The pervert not wanting to let go of the situation, looking at her



afraid to speak, made him touch her more.

Suddenly, the pervert pulled her hand, forcefully pulling her to the left direction. Ai was suddenly pulled aside.

She looked up, to see what the pervert wanted.

Then she saw not only the back of the pervert's hand but also a teenager, seeing this she couldn't react, as she saw an unbelievable scene happen.

At that moment, the boy went towards her, raised his leg and kicked the man standing behind her.

"Ah!" Immediately afterward, he kicked the man who was lying on the ground, clutching his privates while screaming loudly in pain.

Ai just stood there, completely overwhelmed.

Everyone was surprised, but no one dared to speak out.

"You, why did you kick me?" After a while, the man was finally able to breathe, then clutched his pants while watching the young man.

The youth looked at Ai, then softly said: "I'm sorry, my foot cramped."

The whole people on the train looked at the teenager stunned. When the men's gaze fell on to the lying man, many of them felt there thing were also aching.

"You, I'm going to kill you. I won't let you off. I will...." The man struggled to his feet. Although his mouth was saying ruthless things, he still clutched his lower body feeling that he lost some dignity.

"Shut up. I can't guarantee that my feet will not cramp again." He then took one step forward.

The man immediately took two steps back and didn't dare to speak.

But the teenager didn't stop, but instead went a few more steps.

"You, what are you going to do? I, I'll call the police." The man was frightened and continually drew back.

People were afraid of making trouble and didn't dare to go near the man and the teenager.

The youth arrived near the door of the train and came to a halt.

At this time, the speed gradually began to slow down and after a while finally stopped.

When the door opened, the youth sneered against the man: “What do I want to do? I’ve naturally arrived at my destination, of course I’ll get out.” Finishing his words, he suddenly rushed quickly in front of the man. The man was unable to react, and before he knew it, his thing was kicked. He’s whole body flew back.

“Trash.” The youth curled his lip before the man who screamed pitifully, and under this situation, many also went out of the train.

Ai wasn’t able to move until the door was about the closed. She bit her lip and finally went out.

## Chapter 42 - School Festival

---

The young man walked quickly while Ai was not far away from behind him.

“Please, wait, Please wait for a sec.” Ai ran up a bit breathless.

Around the boy’s shoulder was a bag, not hearing anything, he continued to move forward.

“Please wait a sec, Masashi, Gennai Masashi.” Ai ran up in front of him.

The youth stopped, and looked at her, “How do you know my name?”

“You, you may have forgotten, I am Aiko’s classmate, Ai. I’ve seen you at Aiko’s home.”

Masashi thought for a moment and vaguely remembered her.

“Hello, what can I do for you?”

“I ..... In fact, I just .... Just .... I just wanted to thank you.” Ai, being asked such a question by Masashi, didn’t know what to say, but with great difficulty still managed to speak.

Looking at the flushed, helpless girl, Masashi also couldn’t blame

the girl for what happened. He said: “This is just a simple thing. Later if you encounter such a thing again, don’t hold back your voice it would only allow more bad stuff to happen, so it’s normal for those perverts to be arrogant.”

“I...I know. Thank you.” Ai’s voice almost couldn’t be heard.

“It’s all right, I’ll be going, you also have a class now right?”

“Yes, I ..... Can you give me your phone number?..... I actually, I didn’t mean anything by that, I just want to find more time.... To thank you ..... Please, please don’t get me wrong.” Ai was having difficulty to explain.

“Do you have a pen? I’ll write it to you.” Seeing the way she flustered, Masashi smiled.

“I’ll take one out, please wait....” Ai immediately opened her bag to find a pen.

“Where do you want me to write?” Masashi holding her pen asked her with a smile.

The girl was surprised for a moment, and immediately reacted, “I’m sorry, I’ll find a book.” She immediately opened her bag.

“Well, I’m not a star, but I’ll just write on your hand,” He said while pulling her hand, and wrote down his phone number on her palm.

“If something happens just dial this number, then you can find me. Class is about to start, if you don’t go now, then you’ll be late.”

“I, I know, thank you.” Ai bowed towards him.

“I have to go now, bye.”

“Goodbye.”

Ai stood still and looked at his figure getting farther and farther away from her.

Gently holding the phone number written on her left hand, she blushed.

He must have forgotten, in fact, the first time she met him was not at Aiko’s home, but in the park, where he also saved her.

Compared to a year ago, he was now a lot taller, his face changed a lot, and only his eyes hadn’t changed.

I hope that the next time we meet, things will change, and maybe I’ll be able to see him more.

“Senior, have you ever cut your hair this month?” After a pleasant surprise meeting, Rumi put her hand on Masashi’s shoulder who was watching television, while the other hand

fiddled his hair.

“I forgot. What, Do I look like a thug?”

“I just got used to senior’s usual appearance. You look so different, so it’s a little uncomfortable,” Rumi said while looking carefully at Masashi. After a month has gone by, he tanned a lot but looked even stronger than ever. Maybe because of his long hair, she felt that her senior seemed to be a bit different, but couldn’t tell what the difference is.

“Do I have something on my face?”

“No, no.....” Rumi bowed her head a little flustered.

Lowering her head, she saw that she was holding her senior’s right hand. She usually wouldn’t notice this small detail, but now somehow noticed it and made her heart skip a beat while her face felt hot.

“Do you not feel well? Masashi saw that Rumi kept her head down, so he put his hand on her forehead, checking her temperature.

“I..... I’m fine. I think aunt and Kazumi need my help.” Rumi said as she immediately ran towards the kitchen.

But not long afterward, sounds of dishes falling on the ground can be heard, then a sound of Rumi constantly apologizing could

be heard.

‘There’s something wrong with the kid today,’ Masashi thought, ‘it’s not because I suddenly came, right? Well, she might be hiding something she doesn’t want to talk about.’ Masashi picked up an apple on the table to eat.

Not long after was dinner. The table was filled with Masashi’s favorite food. Preparing to eat, Rumiko began to complain about him going out for so long while she wiped her tears with her sleeves.

Masashi immediately looked at Kazumi, but she just made a face and continued to eat her meal.

At the same time, Masashi cursed her disloyalty in his heart, immediately walked over and hugged Rumiko as he admitted his wrong.

“Mom, have you invited Maeda that fellow to dinner?” For a long time, Masashi was unable to persuade her and had to resort to his killer move.

Sure enough, hearing this, Rumiko’s face immediately turned red.

“You’re so rude, how can you call Mr. Maeda that fellow?” Rumiko said angrily.



“There’s no progress in your relationship, always focused on his job, and only calls you,” Masashi smiled and said jokingly.

Rumiko’s face became redder, then struck his head “Just eat, but don’t eat too fast it’s impolite.”

Masashi grinned while sitting down.

“Rumi, eat more, you see, you’re so thin, you too Kazumi.” Rumiko gave Rumi and Kazumi more food.

“Thank you, Aunt.” Rumi had her head down for a while now, as she didn’t want to look at Masashi.

Rumiko smiled at her, the more she lived longer with this cute girl, the more she liked her.

As he looked at Rumiko’s eyes, he understood how she felt, Masashi smiled while pretending to be eating but there was something he didn’t know. Retribution would quickly come towards him.

The next morning, the three people have to go to school.

Even though he was away for a month, Masashi still didn’t want to go but was in the end dragged by the kendo girl.

“Senior, you haven’t gone to school for a whole month, how can

you be so calm when you haven't done any school work?" In the train, he could see Rumi's worried expression.

"Rest assured, the exam, I think I can get a full mark while even using only my toes to write." Masashi then yawned.

"Senior, can you please be serious?" The girl was very dissatisfied with his attitude.

"Oh, you little kid you don't need to be anxious. Don't worry. I still remember our bet." Masashi helplessly touched her head to comfort her.

Again, this feeling. Just being touched by her senior, her heart would skip a beat, but also make her face hot. Last night, was also like this, was she really sick? Rumi was both excited, nervous and confused.

Going back to school, Masashi saw the big gate with a big sign on top, adorned with colorful ribbons, covered with a piece of red cloth in the middle, and can't see what was written.

Walking inside, he found wooden stalls lined up, which differed in sizes. Some were half completed, which exposed its support. There were also those that were completed and carefully modified; each sign said "fresh burn cuttlefish," "shooter," "fortune telling" and so on.

Each class door windows were covered with ribbons and

balloons. Some students standing on a chair decorating their classroom's door can also be seen.

“Can someone tell me what's going on?” Masashi turned to look at Kazumi.

“Fool, did you forget? Tomorrow is the annual school festival. Teachers and students are now getting ready for tomorrow.”

Masashi searched his memory and found the same information.

The school held a school festival celebration every year. The school would invite other students and teachers not far from the private school to join them. In contrast, when the other private schools hold a school festival, the school teachers and students would also have to go.

During the school festival, two schools will have small school sports. This tradition has been going on for almost a decade. Last year, Masashi was in the hospital during that time, just when his private school held the festival making him unable to participate due to his injury.

“Kazumi, what is your class doing this year?” Rumi came over and was vigorously interested.

“Very boring drama.”

“So it's the theater, what time is the performance?”

“Class is about to start, let’s go.” Kazumi didn’t answer and just kept going.

“Kazumi, tell me, what role are you playing?” Rumi caught up and asked.

“You’ll know during the performance. Just come quick.”

“Why are you keeping it a secret, come on, just tell me.” Rumi didn’t give up and kept shaking Kazumi’s arm.

Watching the two girls far away, Masashi smiled, “school festival huh? Anyway, I have nothing to do, so I’ll just take a look around.”

## Chapter 43 - Encounter

---

When they saw Masashi, who didn't show up in class for a long time, the students were a bit surprised, but quickly pretended not to see anything, and continued to do their own thing.

“Long time no see, Gennai-san.” Nagasaki walked towards him while smiling.

“Has anyone told you that your smile looks fake?” Masashi raised one of his legs and positioned it on top of his other leg.

“No, you're the first one. It seems like Gennai-san doesn't have any favorable impression of me, that's a pity.”

“In addition of putting perfume on your body, I also don't like people who put on pretense. Since you and I dislike each other, why bother to pretend being friends. Honestly, I think it's very boring.”

“This is a very common social etiquette, ungrateful people like you, should learn it.” Nagasaki's tone began to turn cold.

“These words are not pleasant to hear but is at least pleasing to the ear compared to the one a moment ago. All right, then, please help yourself.” Masashi was too lazy to pay attention to him and instead pulled out a novel from his bag to read.

Nagasaki was finally enraged by his arrogant attitude; he

clenched his fists, then finally turned around and walked away with a cold look on his face.

Because of the school festival, a few lessons in the morning became self-study. This would allow class teachers and class leaders to continue making preparations. This included decorating classroom, show rehearsal, staff assignments and so on.

Because of Masashi's bad reputation, even though he went to school today. The class leader didn't give him anything to do, allowing him to stay happily idle.

Although Masashi didn't take into heart Japan's invasion of China and he still didn't have any favorable impression of this country, there's one thing he couldn't help but acknowledge. That is the seriousness of Japanese.

Japanese does a lot of things, but even so outsiders would still be able to notice this small matter, and it's their incomprehensible dedication in doing something. After a few decades following World War II, Japan was quickly able to regain their strength through the Japanese people's serious dedication. Masashi would also see students having a picnic during school festivals to mark the occasion.

In the Japanese men's eyes, nothing is more important than work. In order to work, they completely sacrifice their time and many other things. But because of other countries and their self-imposed excessive pressure, many Japanese men have different degrees of psychological problems. This is also the reason why Japan will be one of the reasons for the change in the world. In

addition to that, Japan's pornography industry was successful which is the main reason for the excessive sexual harassment in the country.

After finishing their preparations, the school festival would finally start.

The next morning, students of the two schools were concentrated in hearing the two school principals' speech in the playground.

To distinguish the two schools, students had to wear their school uniform during the School Festival. Thus, in the huge playground, students were divided into two columns one side wearing a red uniform while the other side wearing a green uniform, and at the same time pretty neat to look at.

Even though the principal spoke wholeheartedly on stage, the students still didn't listen. All eyes were constantly looking over the opposite side of their school.

This is, of course, natural because who would want to watch two pigs on stage howling. They rarely see so many hot women outside their school, and they haven't selected their target yet but so what.

"Do you see, that girl looks pretty good, does she have a boyfriend?"

"I see you forgot, even if that girl doesn't have a boyfriend, but there's nothing special about us. Our appearances are also just

average.”

“Who are you looking at?”

“Standing in the second row third from the left that girl looks pretty good, she also seems like a good girl. I chose her.”

“Are you referring to the one with the glasses? Her appearance looks average, right?”

“You don’t understand anything, although her appearance isn’t that good, her body looks pretty good. After I start to know her, I’ll take her to a hotel.”

“I’m not interested in that kind of girl. I still prefer good-looking ones.”

“You overrate yourself.”

“Don’t be so confident, right? You see, that girl over there. I think she likes doing it that’s my type.”

“Her grandmother, does she work for daytime or nighttime?”

Masashi looked at the two boys quarreling with each other nearby. He glanced at them coldly; the two boys suddenly didn’t dare to speak.



Because of this conversation, Masashi wasn't even in the mood to read. Seeing that the two pigs on stage weren't finished, he couldn't do anything else but curse them softly, then turned around to get out of the formation.

"Gennai Masashi, where are you going? We haven't been dismissed yet. You can't just walk around as you want." The class leader immediately came to stop him.

"I'm going to the restroom. Unless you want me to do it in public?" he then ignored him and went away without consulting anyone.

The class leader angrily clenched her teeth.

Masashi went to the roof of the school building, where he usually slept in the open while lying down.

Ah, high school life really is boring, if not for making Rumiko sad, he wouldn't even want to study. He began to miss those choppy, sloppy days.

As he kept thinking of such he thoughts he unconsciously fell asleep.

Not knowing how long he slept, Masashi suddenly stood up.

"Brother, you're lazing around here again. Damn, you frighten me every time." He slowly walked over to Kazumi.

“If you trying to scare me, try again next time. Masashi grinned.

Unless they’re extremely fatigued, can a person be aware of someone ten meters near them, but to him it has become like an animal instinct.

“Brother, hurry down, the school festival has already begun. Rumi is also waiting for us.”

“Started? But from above it only looks like a group of street vendors selling junk. Trying to trick kids into buying their stuff.”

“Hurry up, old man.” Kazumi gave him a scary look.

“You know, you’re getting more and more arrogant,” Masashi smiled and wiggled her face.

“Hateful.” Being ridiculed Kazumi hit him in return.

Going downstairs, Masashi immediately saw Rumi.

“So senior really was hiding on the rooftop lazing around. Let’s go look for something good.” Rumi complained in dissatisfaction.

Masashi blinked, then looked at her from top to bottom. “If I’m not wrong, that’s not our school uniform right?”

Rumi laughed, “Senior, our class now changed into a café. This is our special uniform rented from somewhere, looks good?”

Rumi gently spun around, showing her embroidered lace skirt gently floating on the gentle breeze.

Masashi couldn't help but praise, as Rumi looked beautiful wearing it, giving off a lovely feeling.

Hearing Masashi praise her, Rumi's face immediately turned red, then looked down afraid to look at him.

“I'll go to your classroom with Kazumi and have some coffee there. She might even consider to try helping you out.”

Kazumi nodded.

“Thank you, senior. I'll go prepare first.” Rumi was very pleased.

“Okay, we'll go there later. You go back first.” Kazumi said.

Seeing Rumi disappear, Kazumi accompanied Masashi and walked around in a circle.

They didn't want to eat as the food was burnt, and even the black cuttlefish had a bit of black appearance. Squid and other food were also burned making them not as hungry as before. Even God

wouldn't eat something like this.

When the two went up the second floor, they suddenly heard someone call Masashi's name.

Turning around, they saw a girl in another school uniform come towards them smiling.

"Gennai-san, do you remember me? I'm Clara's friend, the last time we met was at the class reunion."

"Hello, I didn't know you go to Pang Mu private high school."

"I didn't expect to find you here. I saw you during the principal's speech, and initially thought I saw the wrong person. You should sign up for the afternoon games, and I'll even cheer for you okay?"

"Sorry, I'm not signing up. I just want to see it."

Clara's friend was a little disappointed, then asked: "Where are you going now?"

"I'm going to a female schoolmate's class who is doing a café, I'll be going for a drink, are you interested in joining us for a drink?"

"Yes, I'm a little thirsty."

“Brother, let’s leave quickly. Rumi is still waiting for us.” Kazumi urged.

Looking at the sidelines, she saw that the girl had a crush on Masashi. But other than Rumi, she didn’t want any other girl to get close to her brother.

The three walked, but was immediately stopped by four people. Three of them met Masashi at the school reunion, and Kazumi knew, that they were looking to trouble Masashi. Enemies really do often cross each other’s path.

## Chapter 44 - Meeting Again

---

“Clara, so you were here, we were looking for you everywhere.” Shizuko didn’t recognize Masashi immediately.

Clara a little embarrassingly looked at Masashi.

“That is...., ah, it’s you! Why are you here?” Seeing Masashi, Shizuko was very surprised.

The other two boys also recognized Masashi, showing a startled and angry expression.

“Can you introduce me to him?” At this time, on the side, an adult voice resounded.

Clara gratefully looked at the man, “I’ll introduce you, this is my junior high school classmate, Gennai Masashi, next to him is his sister, Gennai Kazumi. Gennai-san, this is our classes new chemistry teacher, Maruo Chojiro. You’re already familiar with the others.”

“Hello. I’m Maruo Chojiro. Nice to meet you.” The young teacher smiled and offered his hand.

“Hello.” Masashi shook his hand.

Masashi suddenly had a strange feeling, as if he saw this person

before. He pondered about it a little bit, but he still had no memory of it.

“Clara, have you been together with him?” The boy who had been tricked by Masashi approached Clara and asked.

“Murata, my affair isn’t any of your concern.”

“I’m your boyfriend.”

“I’ve never acknowledged that.”

“You.....because of him?” The boy pointed at Masashi.

“I said, that my affair isn’t any of your concern. Gennai-san, let’s get out of here.”

Masashi had no choice but to follow her.

“Brother, you’re being considered, as a love rival,” Kazumi came over and whispered.

Seeing her gloating expression, Masashi stared at her.

He hasn’t done anything, but still ended up stirring such a situation.

Approaching Rumi’s classroom, they saw a sign hung on the

entrance with a coffee cup design. There were also beads that were hung at both sides of the door with different colors. On the window, there were ribbons and balloons tied together. From the outside, it looks very colorful.

“Pretty nice, it looks just like a café. Whoever thought of the design definitely has good taste.” Masashi told Kazumi.

“Be careful not to let Rumi hear you, she’s working very hard on setting the table.” Kazumi gave him a look.

“You really are a good guardian, if you join the competition for top parents you’ll definitely get into the top 10.”

“You speak too much, quickly go in.”

Clara chuckled seeing the two siblings bickering with each other.

Going inside, they saw a room filled with borrowed coffee tables and chairs. The female workers wore the same dress as Rumi wore while the males wore uniforms while walking around greeting the guests.

“Senior, Kazumi, you finally came, I’ve been waiting for you for a long time.” The three went inside and was immediately greeted by Rumi.

“Gennai-san, this is....” Clara was amazed at the girl’s splendid appearance.



“Just like I mentioned this is my schoolmate, Nagakawa Rumi. Rumi, this is my junior high school classmate, YoFan Clara, who studies at Pang Mu private high school, which I just happened to come across.”

“Miss YoFan, hello.” In front of outsiders, Rumi would always be humble and polite.

“Hello, Nagakawa-san” Clara nodded to her, expression was a little strange.

After the three had sat down, Rumi placed a tray with three cups of coffee and some snacks.

“Three guests. Please enjoy.” Rumi held the tray looking at Masashi with a beautiful smile.

Masashi, and Kazumi first leaned and sniffed the coffee by reflex, then looked at the person sitting on the opposite side, Clara, who was silent.

“Is there something on my face?” Clara felt a bit uncomfortable as the two looked at her with beaming eyes, then unconsciously wiped her face.

“Nothing, quickly drink, or it will turn cold and taste bad.” Masashi smilingly said.

“Okay.” Clara placed her lips on the cup and immediately drank.

“Does it taste normal?” After seeing her drink, Masashi suddenly asked.

Kazumi stepped on him.

“I mean does it taste good?” Masashi withstood the pain and refrained from crying out.

“Pretty good, it tastes pretty good.” Clara, very lady like wiped her mouth with a paper towel.

They subconsciously felt relieved then began to drink up.

“Come on, try these snacks, they look very tasty,” Kazumi smiled and said to Clara

“Oh, thank you.” Clara was a little startled. She thought that Kazumi hated her, but it seems that it was only her imagination.

“How does it taste?” After Kazumi saw her eat, she quickly asked.

“It tastes good, inside there is a fragrant creamy taste.” And at the same time, Clara sipped her coffee.

“This.”

Seeing Kazumi's disappointed expression, Masashi broke out into cold sweat. He realized what this poisonous woman meant when she said those words.

"Rumi, it seems like you've improved." Tasting the cookie Kazumi joyfully said.

"I didn't make these, my classmates did. I didn't know why, but every time I wanted to help they would ask me to do something else. I also wanted to make some snacks for you to taste."

So that's why it tastes good, the two siblings cried out in their heart.

"It doesn't matter, you can make one at home and give it to brother, and he had just complained to me a month ago that he hasn't tasted your food for a long time," Kazumi said, smilingly.

"Really? Well, senior, I'll go back and make you a snack, do you want cookies or chocolate?" Wearing a cute dress, the girl looked at Masashi cheerfully.

"Whichever you like," Masashi revealed a stiff smile.

"I'll make chocolate because you've just eaten cookies. Rumi's going now; Senior, as well as Miss YoFan, just sit down and wait, I'll go and greet the other guests, and will come back quickly." Seeing people come in, Rumi said a few words and then bounced

away.

“Kazumi, even I won’t let go of your mischief.” Masashi leaned on her side and whispered in her ears dejectedly.

“Brother, may you rest in peace. It’s because you were away for more than a month without a word, this is just interest.” Kazumi leaned away and said.

“I’ll strangle you, you dead girl.” Masashi ate and made a big bite.

Kazumi laughed loudly.

Masashi didn’t want to make a fuss in front of other people, so he had no choice but to give up.

“This dead girl, I’ll get back at you afterward,” Masashi said bitterly.

Clara was calmly sitting at the side, not knowing what they were talking about.

At this time, a few people came, it was Shizuko and the other people. The young chemistry teacher Maruo Chojiro was also among them.

“Why did you come here?” seeing Murata come together with them, made Clara frown and said.

“Why, are we not welcome?” Shizuko said, with a smile.

“Of course not, where do you want to go.”

“Murata, are you worried that Clara is still angry at you. Just apologize quickly like how you’ve always done.” Shizuko bumped Murata.

Murata understood immediately and walked past Clara saying softly: “Sorry don’t be angry, okay?”

“Me, I’m not angry.” Seeing him apologize, made Clara’s heart to slowly soften.

“Let’s go for a walk, okay?” Murata, seeing Shizuko’s glance, immediately know what to say.

“I’m not going. I just want to stay here and sit down.” Clara subconsciously looked at Masashi.

“Well, we’re here to take a break, and anyway, I’m a bit tired. Maruo-sensei doesn’t mind, right?” Shizuko said with a smile.

“I certainly don’t mind. It’s such a rare situation to sit with these many pretty girls.” Teacher Maruo said with a smile.

Since no one declined, the others naturally stayed.

As a result, the five people sat at a table closest to Masashi's table.

# Chapter 45 - Gloomy Night

---

After seemingly sleeping for a long time, Masashi slowly opened his eyes, only to see everything was pitch black.

‘Where is this?’ He asked himself. His brain spaced out and can’t remember anything.

Immediately he found himself with his hands handcuffed behind his back. His feet were also cuffed, and finally, his chest tied by a rope fixed to a chair.

‘Am I being robbed or kidnapped?’

Masashi’s eyes began to adapt to the dark environment. He vaguely saw several people sitting next to him. But they were all motionless, and he can only hear their gentle breathing.

“Kazumi, is that you?” He saw a familiar figure.

The other had no reaction whatsoever.

Masashi has no other choice but to resemble a flea to carry the chair, moving it up and down, little by little.

Finally, he jumped to the side of that person. After taking a closer look, that person really is Kazumi, with Rumi sitting next to her. The two people were also tied to a chair. Only their feet, which

were not tied.

“Kazumi, Kazumi, Rumi, wake up.” Masashi’s head knocked against Kazumi’s body.

Only after about five minutes trying to wake them up did Kazumi gently let out a cry.

“Kazumi, wake up, don’t sleep. I am your brother.”

“Is it dawn yet?” Kazumi blearily opened her eyes. Her face was blank.

“Dawn your head! Do you think we’re home now? Wake up. We are tied by someone.”

“Oh my, what happen?” Then she noticed her and Masashi tied to a chair condition.

“Don’t ask first, I also just woke up. You quickly rouse Rumi.”

When she called out Rumi, Masashi took a closer look at the several people around them, who turned out to be Shizuko and her friends. He also saw another two people that he never saw before.

All the people, without exception, had been tied up.



Soon, Rumi woke up. After knowing that herself tied up, she was shocked and afraid.

“Rumi, don’t be scared. I am Masashi.”

Hearing the voice of Masashi, Rumi immediately settled down.

“Senpai, what happened? Why are we here?” Rumi gently twitched her body, but couldn’t move at all.

“It seems that we were abducted. Don’t worry. We’re going to be okay.”

“Weren’t we having lunch at teacher Maruo’s home? How come we’re suddenly here? Moreover, why we’re all tied up?” Kazumi completely puzzled.

“Because, the one who tied you all up is me.” A magnetic filled voice rang from the outside.

Then, eyes suddenly lit up.

From the darkness to bright, the eyes of the three people could not respond for a while. After adapting, they clearly saw the one who was standing in the doorway was the young and handsome Chemistry teacher Maruo Chojiro.

Because of the light, those unconscious people gradually started

to wake up. Even if they didn't wake up, the ensuing scream from the one who awoke because of the light would've awakened all of them.

For a time, this spacious room filled with shrill screams and bawls.

“Teacher Maruo, why you have to bind us. You must be joking right? Well, you have your fun. Now quickly let go of us, I don't want to play anymore.” Shizuko said to teacher Maruo.

“Teacher, quickly release us. You are breaking the law by doing this.” Her boyfriend also said.

“Do you think I'm joking with you? I'm sorry, you guessed wrong. But you're lucky. You will witness the occurrence of something great. Moreover, you will be an integral part of that.” Maruo's eyes flashed with excitement.

“Stop playing jokes, quickly let go of me. Otherwise, I'll immediately shout for help.” Shizuko loudly said.

“Suit yourself. I will not be foolish enough to do this kind of thing in the city. Here is a lovely mountainous area. Moreover, this house has been abandoned for many years, and the electricity was pulled up yesterday. No matter how you call, no one will hear you. So, you can't escape.” Maruo leaned in front of her and said softly. His voice was as gentle as a lover.

“No, please. I beg of you, let go of me. I beg you....” Shizuko cried.

Initially, the other girl didn't dare to cry, but after hearing this, they also followed Shizuko to cry loudly. Two boys could not help but ask for mercy as they cried.

## Chapter 46 - Floor (Ground)

---

“What are you trying to do?” Masashi looked from the beginning until the end at the smiling man.

“They may not know, but if there’s one person that would know, that would be you, Gennai Masashi.”

“I don’t know what you’re talking about?”

“Really? After you look at this, you should be able to remember.”

Maruo walked to the middle of the room taking the huge sailcloth off the ground.

Masashi looked at something on the ground, his whole body shaking.

“So it’s you.”

“You finally remembered. Gennai-san.” Maruo said, bitterly touching the right side of his chest.

“You kidnapped as for money, right? As long as you don’t hurt me, I’ll give you as much as you want.” Shizuko’s boyfriend called out from the side.

“You’re very rich, right?” Maruo went up to him.

“Yes, yes. My father is the president. As long as you....” Before he could finish talking, the man suddenly kicked his chair knocking him down to the ground.

“Did you think I caught you for money? Pitiful guy, doesn’t even know he’s about to die. Gennai-san, are you interested in satisfying their curiosity?” Maruo asked him.

“Don’t, don’t kill me, I don’t want to die, I’ll give you anything you want, please don’t kill me....” Hearing the word “death,” Murata cried hysterically.

Influenced by him, the others also started crying.

Maruo went over to Murata and slapped him in the face, revealing blood on the corner of his mouth.

“I hate people who interrupt me when I’m talking, whoever interrupts me again, will die.” As he said that, he pulled out a knife, making a gesture.

No one dared to speak again. The entire room immediately became quiet. Only the sound of rapid breathing and a few girls biting their lips trying not to cry can be heard.

“Gennai-san, you still don’t want to say it? Don’ you find this guy’s pitiful.” Maruo made an expression of regret.

Hearing him talk, thinking that they had hope, everyone intently

watching Masashi.

After a while, seeing that he was still silent, a few boys couldn't help but want to call out, but seeing Maruo, they were suddenly afraid to speak.

Masashi looked at the presence of more than a dozen young men and women, then said with a sigh: "He's the guy who's been causing so much trouble cutting up the chest and abdomen part of the victim, the Tokyo Ripper."

"What?!" Everyone exclaimed in surprise.

Although the police feared that this would cause too much commotion, thus blocking the news, newspaper, but in this era of information outbreaks, nothing can be completely masked, much less such a big situation like this.

Almost everyone here knew what the Tokyo Ripper meant. At that time, nearly all of them was desperate. Intense panic enveloped the entire room again.

"You haven't finished yet, Gennai-san. If not for your guidelines, how can those idiot police officers find me? That's why, a person who can anticipate my course of action, absolutely can't know the reason I did this." Maruo said as he gently stroked the ground that accounted almost half of the floor, full of strange and weird colored patterns.

“Don’t you just want to catch this guy, we don’t care about him? I beg you, let me go, I won’t tell this to anyone. Please believe me.” A person who Masashi never met said to Maruo.

“Yes, you just want this guy, please let us go, I beg you....” Shizuko’s boyfriend and Murata’s voice echoed loudly.

“Let us go, please, let me go.”

“Gennai-san, you see, this is the real side of humans.

“I’m sorry, it’s not only him that I want, but I also want all of you. If there’re fewer people here, my ritual may fail. Therefore, no one can be an exception.” Maruo used a cloth to gently wipe the knife he was holding.

“Did you think this rotten ritual will continue, do you really think you can get what you desire? You’re too naïve.” Masashi sneered.

## Chapter 47 - Trade

---

“Looks like Gennai-san is an atheist.” Maruo gently pushed up his glasses.

“Every day a person is either killed in a car accident, put to death by a doctor, battered to death and so on, and among those unfortunate people, 1/10 are a follower of some religious group. God can’t even protect his believers, why should I believe in him?”

“I was just like you an atheist, but I started to believe. But not in God, but in the evil spirits. Only they can actually grant my desire. For this purpose, I had wronged you, and use you as the sacrificial offering for this ritual.”

“Sacrifice? What do you mean, what do you mean, tell me?” Shizuko’s boyfriend kept looking at Masashi.

“Gennai-san, it seems that if you don’t explain to them, they wouldn’t understand.” Maruo gracefully sat on a chair, then rested his right leg on his left leg, smiling at Masashi.

Seeing Rumi and Kazumi’s puzzled look, Masashi smiled bitterly, “this person is a lunatic. Not so long ago when he was in Tokyo, he continually killed people, at that time I had guessed correctly what he was up to. As far as I know, people that cut their victim thoroughly, with the exception of people with neurological problems, there are only two possibility, one is divination, the second is trade.”



Masashi looked at Maruo and continued: “a long time ago in East Asia, some people specializing in divination thought that by cutting open the person born on a special day, observing the shape of the person’s internal organs, allows them to predict the future fortunes of the country as a whole. But this method of divination has being long lost, and once you start, you must simultaneously kill several people, which is impossible. Therefore I ruled out this possibility from the very beginning.”

“There there should only be two possibilities left.”

“If it was a deranged killer, there should be no rules to follow in any time or place. But trade is not the same.”

“The so-called trading, first originated in medieval Europe, it is said that they’re able to have a deal with the devil through the ritual which was invented by some of the followers of the devil. This was also known as the devil’s bargain.”

“Today, this ritual evolved several times. Now it’s not only limited to the followers of the devil. In Asia and America, some people began to use belief in other groups.”

“This guy said that trade is one of them. It is said that it had to be the darkest night of a month, at a specific location, victim cut open alive, dedicated for the devil’s sacrifice, as a means of exchange, to achieve what he desires.”

“In my opinion, this guy’s just daydreaming. If you can trade successfully, and get atomic bombs what can we do?”

“So, I told this to the police and then.....”

“Then, they’ll ambush me at the place that I’ll be likely at, and this was the gift you gave to me.” Maruo interrupted him, then pulling up his clothes up to the chest, exposing a large scar on his right chest.

“Dying back there, is what you wanted right Gennai-san? Unfortunately for you, I’m back. But because of you, my desire was unfulfilled. The ritual held tonight can’t be compared to before, it can only satisfy a little of my desire, but fortunately I caught you, which can be considered as compensation.” Maruo said while fixing his clothes.

# Chapter 48 - Existence

---

“There’s only one thing I don’t understand, how you would know about my existence.” The only person Masashi told was Ryutaro Maeda, so it’s logically impossible for anyone to know about it.

“Originally, I didn’t need to answer any of your questions, but since the ritual can only be held at 12:00 at midnight. There is still a little time until then, so consider this my gift to you.”

“In fact, I initially didn’t know about you, but I have a very talented brother, he often hacked someone else’s computer via a network. There was once he accidentally hacked the Metropolitan Police Department’s server, and saw the report about me. The report was made by a police officer called Maeda. The entire ambush plan was also initiated by him.”

“According to the report that my brother found, there was a time Maeda wrote a report to his superiors, referring to the killer, that my motive was to hold a blood sacrifice. As I mentioned, this was a guess that a teenager brought up. And according to this speculation, they checked my plan based on this aspect, and finally found a clue. This report then produced the subsequent ambush plan on me.”

“The boy he was referring to, was you, Gennai Masashi. Am I right?”

“You found someone to investigate police officer Maeda?”

“Yes. After a month of investigation, I found out that he often came into contact with a young man and that young man can only be you, so I knew you were the person I’m looking for.”

“So that’s it. That’s why you invited us to your home, drugged our meal so that you can both get your revenge and have sacrificial offerings. Really killing two birds with one stone. If I knew you’d drug our meal, I wouldn’t have accepted your invitation.” Masashi said as he cursed police officer Maeda in his heart.

‘His grandmother, I did nothing. But now I’m being used as a sacrificial offering.’

‘A man of integrity who’s being treated in such a way can only be regarded as unfortunate.’

“Why did I come across of such a thing, I don’t want to die, I don’t want to die....” Shizuko, listening to their conversation, finally couldn’t help but cry out.

“I don’t want to die, don’t, let me, help me, help me....” Shizuko’s boyfriend followed up and yelled.

“Time is running out. I want to start doing some preparation. Excuse me, Gennai-san.” His tone was that of an old friend. But the more he did so, the more Masashi thought he was a lunatic.

The others wailed while Maruo went around the giant circle,

having a total of twelve position like that of a clock, lighting a candle for each position.

Then he picked up a black bag, pulling out a clear yellow wine pouring inside the pattern.

Finally, he put the ignited incense at the center. Soon, the room was filled with a faint comfortable smell.

Masashi only smelled a bit, and immediately knew that the incense smelled like a petal of a mandala. This flower only grows in India, although it's very beautiful, it's highly poisonous. After an insect climbs on top of it, it will immediately fall and die instantly. If it were used to make as the fragrance of an incense, people who smell it for a long time would have hallucinations, and finally slowly dying. Luckily it was made with not much of it. Moreover, the room was very big, which is not enough to kill a person, but there would still have a significant impact on the person.

It seems that it's only used as a ritual prop, not wanting to use this flower to kill them.

“Well, everyone, the ritual's about to begin, I hope you have fun,” Maruo smiled and turned off the light, immediately making the room dark, leaving only the twelve candles flickering on the ground.

“No, I don't....”

“I beg you, let me go, let me go, I don’t want to die....”

“You’re a devil, you will not have a good end, let me go, help, someone quickly, help me!”

“I beg you, if you let me go, I am willing to do anything for you. Do you not think I’m beautiful? I’ll take care of you well.” Shizuko cried out to Maruo.

“Babe, relax, it won’t be painful.” Maruo touched her hair gently.

“Don’t, let me go, I beg you, I don’t want to die, just let me go, I beg you.....” Shizuko didn’t give up.

“I said, everyone is indispensable. After the ritual is successful, you will all become part of me. We will all be together forever. In order to make the ritual undisturbed, I will have to greatly inconvenience you all.” Maruo kissed her on the head, then took out a towel tying it around her mouth.

After tying her mouth, he took out a few towels, and, one by one, began to tie everyone’s mouth

# Chapter 49 - Answer

---

When Masashi turned, Maruo said to him: “Gennai-san, do you have anything else to say? Otherwise, you’ll have no other chance to do so.”

“I have two bad news for you.” Masashi suddenly said something incomprehensible.

“Oh, what’s the bad news?” Maruo said wanting to see what tricks he had left.

“The first bad news is that you may not have the opportunity to hold your boring ritual.”

“What do you mean?” Maruo looked at him coldly.

“Don’t you hear it?”

“Hear what?”

“Police sirens.”

“What?” Maruo’s face suddenly became pale, immediately ran to the window to see whether it’s true.

After a while, he turned around and looked at Masashi, and sneered, “Do you really think that someone will come and save

you? I've already said before, no one will find out where we are."

"Really?" Masashi said calmly.

Seeing Masashi's confident appearance, Maruo began to waver. He turned to the window and listened attentively.

Time past, the room was silent as if it became peaceful.

No one dared to speak, listening attentively for any movements outside.

After a long time of waiting, Maruo's face became very ugly. In contrast with him, the others were making a joyful expression.

It's true, they really heard it. A police car siren, becoming more and more clearer. These boys and girls for the first time found out how wonderful the sound was. If they weren't tied up and made to shut up, they wouldn't have help but cheer.

"Impossible, impossible, how did they find where we're at? There should be no one besides me that knows this place. Him...." Maruo clearly saw a few red lights approaching the place his at.

"Yes, it must be him, I should have thought of him." Maruo's face became pale again.

If it was elsewhere, he could have thrown everything that he could to escape from here. But not here, since the house was



surrounded by mountains. The only way out was the way they got in.

This building was the old house “he” helped him to find. And it turned out that it’s been so long since “he” has helped them make an arrangement for a place to stay.

Seeing these boys and girls were very excited, Maruo suddenly laughed, with a pale expression made a smile that would make a person shudder.

“You’re very happy, right? But don’t forget, your life is still in my hands. If I can’t escape, no one can.”

The students were initially hopeful, but hearing this, they immediately became pale. Maruo looked at them with a smile, and everyone felt a cold chill as they thought that they’re about to die, the terrors in their eyes appeared yet again.

“Dying alone is too depressing, that’s why you all have to accompany me.” Maruo holding a knife went towards the nearest person.

And the person closest to him was Rumi.

Seeing Maruo getting closer and closer, Rumi looked at Masashi making her feel an indescribable nostalgia, then looked at Kazumi, and finally slowly closing her eyes waiting for her doom.

Rumi's body was twitching, tears continuously flowed out as he got nearer to her.

“Hey, do you want to hear the second bad news?” Maruo was only a step away from Rumi when he suddenly heard Masashi's voice.

Maruo stopped, turned around and looked at him, and suddenly laughed, “I've been waiting for you to open your mouth. It seems you're very nervous when it concerned to this girl; that's great. I have to admit I really hate you. That's why I'm going to kill her right in front of you, then, kill your sister next. You will be the last one to die. I will make you suffer the most painful death.”

“Do you think I'm saying this in order to buy some time until those idiotic cops arrive?”

“Aren't you?” Maruo looked at him coldly.

“I'm sorry, but you've guessed wrong.” Masashi suddenly made an evil smile.

Seeing Masashi's smile, Maruo was immediately wary.

But it was too late.

One hand, a hand suddenly appeared out of nowhere, gently striking at Maruo's right wrist where he was holding his knife.

“Snap!” A sound can be heard, as he had no time to react, Maruo’s wrist bent in an unnatural way.

Immediately feeling great pain, Maruo made a face full of grief.

Suddenly, he felt his chest was hit by a hammer knocking him back several step, and heard several of his ribs breaks, in the end, he didn’t know what happened.

“The second bad news was, that the rope was unable to restrain me.” Masashi kicked Maruo making him pass out, sneering at him.

# Chapter 50 - Launch

---

Everything happened in a split second. Everyone just saw Masashi suddenly standing up, instantly striking Maruo's hand, and immediately kicking Maruo. In this way, the famous Tokyo Ripper fell to the ground motionless. The method was fast and simple giving people a kind of unreal feeling.

“It must have been terrifying, but it's all right now.” Masashi's hands gently touched Rumi and Kazumi's face.

They stared at him for a while and suddenly bursts into tears.

After getting untied, the two girls hugged Masashi, four hands grabbed his clothes and a constant trembling motion can be felt.

Seeing them so scared, made Masashi feel a little regretful, and he should have just gotten rid of him right away.

In fact, Maruo had disguised himself well, at least until they went to his home, he didn't find any problems with this man. But when Masashi tasted the guy's cooking, he knew that this good man wasn't actually good.

Although he didn't know what he put, it was certainly not seasoning.

Maybe most people couldn't taste any problem in the meal, but to this millennium old devil Masashi, it was a childish trick. His first idea was that this man may be one of the underground people or an

associate that ReiLi mentioned. In order to confirm this, he pretended that he had fainted like everyone else. As he listened to Maruo, he realized that this guy was just an abnormal and paranoid person.

“It’s all right. It’s all right.....” Masashi kept repeating these words, as his hands gently stroke their hair.

After a while, the two girls finally calmed down, his hands still clutched at them tightly.

Masashi had no choice but to calm the two one by one.

Apart from Shizuko and her boyfriend, everyone gratefully thanked him. And because they were tied too long, they had a hard time standing. However, one thing of certain, everyone was filled with the joy of being alive.

“Gennai-san....” Clara cried as she said Masashi’s name while stumbling as she ran towards him.

“Are you all right?” Afraid that she might actually fall, Masashi’s hand held her.

Clara wanted to cry as she held him, but because Kazumi and Rumi were still hugging him, she had no place to hold.

“Clara, are you okay?” Murata also came over.

“I’m fine,” Clara said she looked profoundly at Masashi.

“The police are coming, let go down now.” Masashi didn’t want to get involve with the disputes between Murata and Clara and said with concern.

At this time, most of the students have gotten out of the room.

But suddenly, a girl screamed. Masashi looked back and saw Maruo, who was supposed to be lying down unconscious suddenly awake not knowing when he gained consciousness. The screaming girl hurriedly ran out. With her influence, others also followed her. Even Clara was forcibly taken away by Murata. At this time, there was only four people in the room: Masashi, Kazumi, Maruo, and Rumi.

The original arrogant man was now panting difficulty, along with a trace of blood streaming down his mouth.

Although he felt a bit embarrassed, he still wickedly looked at Masashi.

After looking at each other for approximately three seconds, and suddenly noticed a trace of joy from Maruo’s eyes.

“Too late, I want you buried with me.” Maruo burst out laughing.

To his surprise, Masashi had immediately held the two girls jumping out from the open window.

Seeing them disappear out the window, Maruo looked at the time bomb hidden behind the sofa, revealing a wry smile, saying to himself: “I’ve lost.”

After saying his last words, the bomb’s timer from “00:00:01” became “00:00:00”, and then saw a dazzling white flash....

# Chapter 51 - Tranquil

---

“Excuse me, which room is Gennai-san at?”

“He’s in room 309” the nurse desk blurted out.

“Thank you.” After bowing, Ryutaro Maeda walked towards the third floor.

‘His also looking for Gennai Masashi, why are there so many people looking for that boy? And this time, it’s a police officer. That boy isn’t guilty of anything, right?’ The nurse wandered again.

Maeda knocked at the door, which was answered by a lazy voice, “come in.”

Opening the door, he saw Masashi leaning comfortably on the bed, holding a book as the boy looked up at him.

Kazumi was sitting on his bed peeling an apple. Seeing Maeda come in, she immediately made a “be quiet” gesture towards Maeda, while pointing at Rumi, who was lying asleep on the sofa.

Masashi suggested going out for a talk by making a gesture, Maeda nodded.

When Masashi reached the door, Kazumi gave him the peeled



apple, he then smiled, took it and went out.

After a while, they've finally arrived at the rooftop.

"I just travelled back to the police station, I've heard about what happened, I didn't imagine that such things could occur." Ryutaro Maeda was the first one to speak.

"It's all thanks to brother's blessings," Masashi said with sarcasm.

Maeda forced a smile, "I didn't think that that guy would see my reports. Really sorry, for involving you and Kazumi, even Rumi was involved in this case." Maeda made an expression full of guilt.

"By the way, how's the group of kids doing? Did anyone die?"

Seeing Masashi so relaxed like usual, Maeda didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"Fortunately, no one died. Just that three people were hit by the shockwave of the explosion resulting in broken rib or thigh fractures while others have varying degrees trauma. Them, and in addition to the three of you, all of you should go through psychotherapy."

"I'm still capable of living a good life. As for psychological problems I have none." Masashi shrugged.

“Well, if that’s all, I want to go back to rest. If you have free time, help the three of us go through the discharge process today. In fact, I know best their situation, but my mother insisted that we carefully check it, I really don’t want to stay here.”

“But if Rumiko finds out she’ll be angry.” Maeda recovered, a little embarrassed to say.

“Mom hasn’t married you yet so you don’t have to be obedient, if you get married to her later then you must listen to her.”

“No, Rumiko is a very gentle and very reasonable woman,” Maeda said, a little embarrassed.

Looking at the man expose a gentle expression, Masashi couldn’t help but find it a little funny.

“In short, you are responsible for helping us with the discharge procedures. That will be your punishment.” Masashi waved his hand, expressing that there’s no room for negotiation.

“Well, I’ll talk to Rumiko about it,” Maeda said a little annoyed.

“You’ve worked hard.” Masashi laughed.

After talking to Maeda, Masashi went back to his room. Opening the door, he saw the two girls asleep.

Watching them quietly sleeping, Masashi suddenly felt kind of guilty. Although it wasn't intentional, he still got them involved in this bizarre case.

Masashi sighed, then picked up two blankets, gently covering it on them.

After two days in the hospital, and being carefully checked. Rumiko was finally willing to go home.

After going home, Rumiko to celebrate their return, made a big table of food.

Masashi looked, and saw that most of it were vegetarian, it seemed that Maeda told Rumiko that they couldn't eat meat as it would be bad for them.

Thinking that this big burly man has a careful side, Masashi grinned at him.

"What, is there something on my face?" Maeda found it a little strange.

"Nothing, just a little curious about something. You shouldn't be pure Japanese, right?"

"How do you know?" Maeda looked at him in surprise.

Hearing him talk, Rumi and Kazumi was also interested.

“It’s because the standard Japanese men wouldn’t go into the kitchen to help, they think it’s a man’s disgrace. Another point is the most important one, your facial figure with native Japanese men is somewhat different. In Japan, a deep facial figure such as yours can rarely be seen.

“You, not being a police is really a waste. You’re right. My father is a Filipino while my mother is Japanese. But they’ve long since divorced, I was ten years old when I started living together with my mother in Japan, which is why I can no longer speak Tagalog, you’re the first person to notice this matter.”

“Senior, you can give people’s fortune by physiognomy,” Rumi said innocently.

The atmosphere during dinner was very good, and may convince people that they’re a family.

## Chapter 52 - Boyfriend

---

After only resting at home for two days, the three had to go back to school.

According to Maeda, there were already many people who knew about the Tokyo Ripper incident. The police in Tokyo confirmed the death of the ripper, intentionally or unintentionally, the news leaked out reassuring many people.

Nobody knew that Masashi was the main victim of the case. After several days of absenteeism, they made a false reason for temporarily going back to visit their relatives.

Just like his return from the “dead” before, Masashi was still a transparent person in the class. Because of the theft that happened in the past made the students unwilling to talk to him. In contrast, he didn’t have anything to say to this little kids. If there was a generation gap between middle-aged men and teenagers, Masashi and them have a Mariana trench that exists between them. Therefore, he was happy to be alone, reading books or sleeping in class, brazenly skipping class when bored. In the eyes of the students and teachers, this degree of arrogance is detestable, but in the end, they weren’t able to do anything.

A soft music echoed in the café when suddenly a “ding” sound can be heard, the bell that was stuck on top of the door’s frame with the door opening also sounded.

“Hello, welcome. For how many people?”

“I have an appointment with some people, I’ll just look around.”

“Make yourself at home, if you need anything please feel free to call me.”

“Thank you.”

Masashi looked around, and saw Aiko standing up and waving her hand fiercely, sitting right next to her were three girls.

“You’re late,” Aiko said discontentedly.

“Little devil you need to be more reasonable, calling me to get here in five minutes? You think I’m like those guys who like to fly around wearing panties all day.” Masashi and the three other girls nodded. He remembered that he met her classmates at Aiko’s place. Which also included the girl named Ai.

“Hello, Gennai-san.” After the other two girls greeted Masashi, Ai greeted him timidly.

“Little Ai, do you know this guy very well?” Aiko found it a little odd and asked.

“No, just came across her once in the streets. Well, did something happen?” seeing that Ai was somewhat hesitant, Masashi instead answered.

“Can’t I find you for no reasons? Order something first.” Aiko smiled very sweetly.

Masashi waved his hand and called the waitress over.

“Hello, do you want anything?” The waitress politely asked.

“A cup of cappuccino.”

“Yes, I’m sorry, could you repeat that?” the waitress reddened all over her face.

Masashi smiled, “You must be new here, right? Cappuccino, I’ll have a cappuccino coffee.”

“I’m sorry, I’ll show you the menu, please wait.” Drops of sweat could be seen on the waitress’ face as she walked away panicked.

“Well, bumbling guy,” Aiko grinned.

“Is that an attitude of someone asking for help?” Masashi exposed a playful smile.

“Who, who asked for your help?”

“Come on, I don’t believe you’ll go look for me just to catch up.

You definitely have something to say.”

Aiko with strange eyes looked at him for a moment, then turned to the three girls next to her and said: “Do you really think this guy can help? He’s also not pleasing to the eye.”

“Aiko, how can you say something like that?” Asami stared at her.

“Well originally, this guy looks somewhat reliable. If not, you wouldn’t....” not finishing her words, her mouth was covered by the other girl.

“I’m sorry, Gennai-san, Aiko didn’t mean that, please don’t misunderstand,” Asami smiled.

Masashi as if he didn’t hear anything, very leisurely sipped his coffee, and then said: “If you still won’t tell me, I’ll go.”

“Gennai-san, I would like to ask, how tall are you?” Ryoko asked.

“I don’t know, I don’t measure it.”

“What about the height you had during the school medical examination held once a year?” Asami pulled Aiko, as she stared at his face.

“It seems to be 173 centimeters.” Masashi thought for a moment



before answering. Ever since he reincarnated, Masashi would daily train his body that far exceeded the ordinary exercise, so now his height would be 15 cm taller.

“That’s good, you should be qualified. Aiko, you don’t need to think about it, he’s the one” Asami clapped excitedly and said.

“Okay then. I don’t know anyone else anyway.” Aiko revealed a face of someone suffering injustice.

Masashi put down his cup of coffee, “Can you tell me what I can do?” He felt like his being forced to sell a cattle, but the buyer wasn’t very willing to look at it.

The four girls, looked at each other for a bit, then finally, voted telepathically, unfortunately for Asami she was the one chosen to be the representative.

She gave a little cough before saying: “Gennai-san, Aiko would like you to be her boyfriend.”

Just after finishing talking, Masashi didn’t react, while Aiko cried aloud: “Come on, you speak more clearly don’t just tell him to be my boyfriend, what she just told you about is a temporary task. Listen carefully, you hear, she means, I mean, I want to ask you to temporarily pretend to be my boyfriend. Don’t misunderstand ah, really only temporary. Hey, don’t just drink, listen to me.”

“I refuse.” Masashi after finishing his coffee finally said something.

“What, you refuse? Why?” Aiko stared at him.

“Because it’s boring.”

“Boring you say? Piss me off. You tell me, what’s boring?” Aiko almost went crazy.

“Let me guess, there’s a boy in school who’s chasing you desperately. Although you refused him, but he still wouldn’t give up hope, then you told him that you have a boyfriend. Which you told him so that he would give up hope. But the boy didn’t believe you, and he said he wanted to meet your boyfriend before he agrees to give up. So now, you’re looking for someone to pose as your boyfriend. Unfortunately, that guy is me, who you selected, that will act as this silly role. Did I guess it right?” Masashi leaned against the chair and looked at her.

“You, how do you know?” Aiko and the others couldn’t believe it and looked at him.

“Because those people who wrote the third-rate script is also written like this.”

“In any case, Gennai Masashi, do you have the heart to do nothing about it?” Aiko said as she pointed at him.

Masashi couldn't help but laugh.

“Damn, you laugh, if you dare laugh again, then I won't be polite.” Aiko was trembling with rage.

“In face, having more than one suitor is also good. Well, at least you can eat breakfast for free every day.” Masashi said with a smile.

“Sarcastic guy. I won't ask for your help even if I don't find someone else to.” Aiko angrily stood up to leave.

Asami hurriedly pulled her back to her seat, patting her shoulder to sooth her. Then turned towards Masashi and said: “Gennai-san, this time we're sincerely asking you to help chase away the boy bothering Aiko, that guy's a clingy man, he even told some people, that if they dare to steal his beloved Aiko, he would make their life worse than death. We've made inquiries about him, and found out that during junior high school, he liked a girl, but the girl turned him down. However, just after two days had passed. The girl was harmed.”

“What happened?” Masashi asked.

“On the way home. She was raped by a few hoodlums.” Asami went silent for a moment, then continued.

“Later, the police took the boy back to the police station, but in the end, they lacked evidence and had no choice but to release him.

While we're not too sure about certain things about him, but don't you feel that it's too much of a coincidence?"

"Therefore, we came to ask Gennai-san to help Aiko. Please." With that, Asami bowed towards him.

Seeing her bow made Masashi think for a moment, "All right, I'll do it free of charge." Masashi was struck by Asami's serious eyes.

"Thank you very much, Gennai-san." In addition to Aiko, the three girls were also obviously very happy.

"Hey, kid, don't start acting like you owe me one, we just came to an agreement."

"Damn this guy." Seeing that Masashi promised to help, Aiko's complexion immediately became much better.

## Chapter 53 - Performance (Show)

---

On Sunday, Masashi arrived at the appointed place he had agreed upon, which was at a café just opposite of the Shinjuku Keio hotel.

It was the Shinjuku holiday making the place have more people than usual, and most of them were fashionably dressed youths.

Under the guidance of the waiter, Masashi soon found Aiko and her friends.

Seeing Masashi, the three girls seemed jubilant, but Aiko was the only one who felt uncomfortable.

“Wearing this, how can you pretend to be my boyfriend?”

Masashi looked at himself, and then said: “This is what I usually wear, is there something wrong with it?”

“It’s no good. It’s too shabby. Let’s go, and pick some clothes for him.” Aiko waived her hands towards the waiter signaling that she was going to pay.

The other three female students also stood up revealing a wide grin on their face.

Masashi also somewhat reluctantly waved his hands.

After leaving the café, Aiko together with Masashi came to the most bustling shopping place in Shinjuku, which was the Shinjuku shopping center.

“Here, try this one.” In the men’s fashion district, Aiko looked around for a bit, then took out a GUCCI green suit and handed it over to him.

“Besides attending funerals, I usually don’t wear suits.” Masashi sat down on a chair, as he watched them pick clothes for him in turns.

“Then how about this one?” Asami came over holding a blue windbreaker.”

“Makes one look like his naked.”

“Then what about this one?” Ryoko lifted up a blue jean.

“Do you want me to die from the heat?”

“Then you choose, troublesome guy.” Aiko began to get impatient.

“Your tastes are very problematic.” Masashi readily grabbed pieces of light gray casual clothes then went inside the changing room.

After a while, Masashi came out from the changing room, still holding the T-shirt.

“Come on. It’s about time. Miss, could you help me pack this clothes.” Masashi handed the T-shirt to the female employee.

The girls looked for a moment towards the clothes packed by the female employee.

Seeing Aiko take out her credit card, Masashi immediately went in front of her handing the cashier his credit card.

“What are you doing?”

“Nothing, just not used to woman helping me to pay.”

“Machismo.” Aiko didn’t insist and put away her credit card.

“Hey, are you bringing those clothes to where we’re going? Quickly throw it away.” Walking out of the door, Aiko saw Masashi still carrying a plastic bag.

“Little sister, wasting things is not right. Plus I really like this clothes.”

“Gennai-san, I’ll keep it for you, and give it back later.” Ai suddenly whispered.

“Ah, then that would trouble you.”

“No trouble, no trouble at all.” Ai whispered.

After separating with the three girls, Aiko returned with Masashi to the café as more boys appeared.

Not long after, a boy dressed in a black suit, with a big acne on his face came over with some boys.

“Aiko, I didn’t think you’d come so early. I figured I arrived late.” The boy’s eyes sparkled as he looked at her.

“Actually, we just arrived not long ago. Mito-san, I’ll introduce you, this is my boyfriend, Gennai Masashi, and this is the guy that I told you about my schoolmate Mito Toyokawa.”

Masashi deeply looked at the boy, then held out his hand and said: “Hello, Mito-san.”

Mito Toyokawa didn’t shake hands with him, as he looked at Aiko surprised, “Aiko, is he really your boyfriend?”

“Why would he be fake? I already told you that I already have a boyfriend, but you didn’t believe me.” Aiko put a very natural front.

Masashi sighed in his heart, emotionally, every woman was born a liar. Whether it be a girl or a woman they would still be the same.



“I don’t believe you. You must be trying to trick me.” Mito appeared to be very excited.

Masashi knew that it was his time to act.

He walked toward Aiko, imitating the television drama series actor he gently put his hand around her waist, and then said to the boy: “Mito-san, Aiko is my girlfriend, so don’t harass her again. If there’s nothing else, we’ll go ahead, we still have a movie to watch, if you’ll excuse me.” With that, Masashi held Aiko’s hand as they walked towards the door.

Mito stood still and watched them leave.

The two walked out of the café and went to a distant place, after which Masashi released Aiko’s hand.

“Let’s call it a day, it’s been silly enough.” Masashi yawned.

“That’s it?” Aiko couldn’t believe it.

“Talking too much would lead to errors, but feeding him fake details, would instead make people doubt. This is just right. I looked at the guy, and seemed like he wouldn’t look trouble for you anymore.”

“But...but...Is there really no more problem?”

Masashi lowered his head for a moment, then suddenly took out a jewelry box from his pocket.

“This is for you.”

“What is it?” Aiko took the box and looked at it.

“Just open it and see.”

Aiko curiously opened the box and saw a specially designed and fine crafted bracelet.

“This.....Is this for me?” Aiko asked, very surprised.

“Do you like it?”

Aiko looked at the bracelet over and over again and began to like it more and more, seeing this item she wasn't able to resist its charm anymore. But she suddenly felt a little puzzled and asked: “Why'd you suddenly give me such a thing?”

“Nothing, just saw it, and felt quite right for you, so I bought it.”

“It's that simple?” Aiko looked at him suspiciously.

“Things have always been very simple, but are just made

complicated by some people.”

Aiko was tired of listening to him preach, and happily put it on her left hand, but found it a little too big.

“Fool, this is a foot ring, not a bracelet.” Masashi couldn’t help but laugh.

“What, foot bracelet?” Aiko looked carefully, and sure enough, the diameter of the bracelet was almost the same as her feet.

Aiko couldn’t wait to crouch down and fasten it on her ankle.

She stood up and looked at it, then kicked her foot, thinking that it was very amusing.

“Your trouble is resolved, and I also sent you a gift, so I’ll go now.”

“You.... You’re leaving now?” Aiko thought he would invite her to watch a movie or go somewhere else to play.

“Anything wrong? Don’t you want me to leave?” Masashi said with a smile.

“Well, you devil isn’t willing. So be it, I’ll go first.” Aiko grumbled as she spoke.

“Hey, kid, you seem to have forgotten one thing.”

“What?” Aiko looked at him strangely.

“When someone helped you, don’t you have to say something?”  
Masashi said with a smile.

Thinking for a while, Aiko stated in a loud voice: “Thank You.”

“Hateful guy.” With that, she angrily left.

“Funny kid.” Seeing her get farther and farther away, Masashi smiled and walked in a different direction.

Around 0:00, Masashi usually practiced in his room. When suddenly, he heard a knock on the door.

Hearing the knock, he opened the door to look and turned out to be Kazumi. “Kazumi, what happened?”

“Brother, someone’s calling for you.” Kazumi gave him the wireless phone.

“You woke up by the noise, so just go back to sleep,” Masashi said as he received the phone.

However, Kazumi didn’t go, and just looked at him quietly.

“What, Aiko’s missing? When did this happen?”

“I know, I’ll be right over.”

“Ah, I know that place, I’ll be there in ten minutes.”

After hanging up the phone, Masashi immediately put on a coat.

“Brother, what happened?”

“Nothing, a friend just suddenly disappeared, I’m just going to take a look.”

“Then you have to be careful.”

“Rest assured, just go back to bed, you still have to go to school tomorrow, don’t worry about me.” Masashi comforted her for a moment then left out. After only a few steps, he suddenly went back to his room and put some things in his pockets.

## Chapter 54 - Missing

---

Driving a motorcycle, Masashi finally arrived at Aiko's apartment and saw three of her classmates anxiously waiting for him at the door. Seeing Masashi, the three girls immediately gathered around him.

"Did you call the police yet?" Masashi came and asked.

"I've already reported it, but the police said that they could only file an investigation if the person has been missing for more than 24 hours. In the end, they just told us to wait." Asami said very angrily.

"Did you notify Aiko's family yet?"

"No, because we don't know her parent's phone number."

Masashi thought for a while, "Are you sure she's really missing? Tell me from start to finish what happened again."

Asami after a pause said: "In the morning after you left, Aiko went with us to the cinema to see a movie. By noon, we ate out, then in the afternoon, we went to shopping at Roppongi. Until about 7 in the evening, right?" She looked at Ryoko, who was at her side.

Ryoko thought for a moment, then nodded.

“Aiko was a little tired and wanted to go back to rest. So, we just ended the day.

At 9:00, I called her at her home's phone, but no one answered. So I called her cell phone, but still no one answered. I thought there was a problem, so I called their phones, but they also didn't know where Aiko is. Tell me where's Aiko, she'll be all right, right?” Asami was getting more and more anxious. The other two also looked anxious.

“Calm down. Maybe things aren't as you think. Did you go inside yet?”

“We don't have the key to her house.”

Masashi thought for a moment, and along the house, there was a semi-circular balcony. Then he said: “You wait here, I'll go in and open the door for you.”

“But how will you get inside?” Ryoko asked.

“Have you watched Spider-man?” After Masashi had finished speaking he went underneath the balcony, then stepping back, he suddenly forcefully jumped up, putting his hand up he seized the column of the second-floor balcony. Then immediately jumping to the balcony, every movement being proficient.

When Masashi opened the door from the inside, what visit him were three girls in a daze.

“Are you a monkey?” Asumi said in surprise.

“Miss, say it nicely okay? Call it agile.”

“You’re exaggerating, right? If you had said that you’re a thief, I’d believe you.”

The other two girls couldn’t help but laugh.

Masashi snappily looked at her.

Entering the hallway, Masashi turned on all the lights, carefully observing everything inside the house.

“Aiko, are you in there?” Asami shouted a few times, and then the three girls divided checking the kitchen, bathroom and other rooms inside the place.

Masashi stood for a moment, then hastily went to the kitchen pulling out Ryoko, “Take me to Aiko’s room.”

Ryoko nodded and went with Masashi to the second floor.

Arriving at the room, they saw Ai who had just come out from inside.



“Did you see her?” Ryoko asked quickly.

Ai shook her head.

Masashi walked into the room, which was a typical young girl’s room. He saw the bed and closet filled with cartoon dolls, and even the sheets, had a Pikachu printed pattern on its quilt. Star posters were plastered on the walls which were on top of the wardrobe. At the right side of the bed there was a large desk, and on top of it was a computer and at the side was a TV. With a faint aroma that filled the entire room.

“Try and call Aiko’s phone.”

Ai immediately pulled out her cellphone and dialed.

After a few seconds, a ring tone resounded in the room.

Masashi tracked down the tone and found the phone under the pillow on the bed.

“Aiko where exactly did you go? Usually, you would carry your phone no matter where you went.” Ryoko said a little afraid.

“First thing is certain, she had come back home, but also went to sleep on her bed. Later, for some unknown reason, she went out. Do you know if Aiko has sleepwalking habits?”

“I’m not sure, but I think she didn’t. Because in the past, she slept at my place for a few days. That’s when her sister had left, and she said she was a bit afraid to be here alone. But later got used to it, and moved back in. At least in my house, I didn’t see her sleepwalking.” Asami said thoughtfully.

Masashi nodded and told them: “Now I’ll go drive and look for her outside, now it’s late at night, so you girls stay here and don’t go out. If I still don’t call back until morning, call the police and report about this incident. Before then, wait for any calls as it might be a message from Aiko, let’s exchange cell phone contacts first.”

The three girls nodded.

After each of them had exchanged cell numbers, they sent Masashi out.

After Masashi started the motorcycle, he suddenly pulled out a Gameboy-like stuff from his pocket. After having a closer look at it, he put it back in his pocket.

After he had left, the three girls were in front of the turned on entrance lamp, then immediately returned to the living room.

“Little Ai, what happened to you, your face is so pale, are you tired?” Ryoko asked.

“I’m all right.” Ai shook her head.

“You’re always like this, no matter what you just keep your thoughts inside your heart. Are you okay?” Asami wiped her forehead.

“I, I’m fine, I’m just thinking.....” Ai said hesitantly.

“Think of what?” Ryoko couldn’t help but pursue further.

Ai looked at their eyes, then lowered her head and whispered: “I was thinking, is Mito Toyokawa somehow related to this matter?”

Hearing her remark, the other two girls face immediately turned pale.

Remembering the rumor, the three girls just couldn’t help but feel more and more uneasy.

“I don’t think that he should be related to his matter, didn’t Gennai-san say Aiko walked out, perhaps she might have an urgent matter to attend to,” Ryoko smiled wanting to lighten the mood.

“Well, don’t think too much, let’s take turns watch, as Aiko might suddenly return.” Asami no longer wanted to pursue the matter, and immediately ending the topic.

# Chapter 55 - That Person

---

Aiko slowly woke up and opened her eyes, but found she was not lying in her bed. Instead, it was an old sofa.

Looking around, the place was actually spacious but filled up with old furniture. Across the hall, there's a single energy-saving lamp that illuminated the place.

‘Where is this place? Why am I not at home?’ Aiko rubbed her eyes to make sure she was not dreaming.

After a while, Aiko completely woke up. When she discovered that she was alone in the entire hall, she began to feel afraid.

She thought to look at the window over the side. So, barefooted, she gingerly walked to the window.

Looking out at the already broken in half glass, the outside was dark, and she couldn't see anything.

When she was confused about what to do, all of a sudden, the energy-saving lamp dimmed, shined, and then quickly went dark.

In the alternating between dark and light, she heard slow footsteps on the stairs.

“Who are you?”

“Fool, I am Kazumi.” A dark figure replied.

“Why don’t you turn on the light? This almost made me scare to death. This late at night, why haven’t you sleep yet?” Rumi said, patting her chest.

“Then why don’t you go to bed?” Kazumi stood up and stretched out.

“I’m a bit thirsty and went to get a glass of water. Can’t you sleep?” Rumi sat down next to her.

“I’m like you, a little thirsty wanting to drink, and then conveniently sit here.” Kazumi thought that she definitely won’t let Rumi know about Masashi going out in the middle of the night, lest she worried.

“So it turns out to be like this.” Rumi, like a cat, put her head on Kazumi’s shoulder.

Kazumi smiled and fondly stroked her hair.

“Kazumi, recently I feel somewhat not normal.”

“Tell me about it.”

“You must promise me not to tell senpai ok.” Rumi raised her head and looked at Kazumi’s face carefully.

“Fine, I promise you.” Kazumi nodded her head.

Rumi leaned and whispered close to her ear. Without hearing the full story, Kazumi could not help but smile.

“Why are you like this, I’m being serious. What’s so funny?” Rumi resentfully pouted.

“You really told this to the school doctor?” Kazumi stopped her smile and asked in amazement.

“Of course, since my body is feeling ill, I naturally seek out a doctor.”

Seeing her matter-of-factness expression, Kazumi found it too funny and can’t help but smile again.

“Little fool, this really suit you. Don’t tell me before this you never like a boy?”

“There was. During my stay in Hokkaido, I liked to play with the boys in my neighborhood. I used to play baseball with them, and go fishing in the summer.” Remembering the amusing memories in the past, Rumi could not help but smile.

Kazumi then remembered, when Rumi was still a very small child, her mother died of illness. After growing up a little bit, she followed her grandfather to assiduously practice Kendo. Before coming to Tokyo, not to mention entertainment, even TV was rarely seen by her. Therefore, after living here, her favorite pastime is watching TV. Moreover, in her family's Kendo hall, all the people there were either older uncle or an adult. These people would usually treat her as if she was a boy. Growing up in this environment, Rumi never had any experience in this area. Except for her growing body, in terms of psychological development, she was basically a child.

“Kazumi, I don't have any problem do I? Otherwise, why would every time senpai look at me, my body would feel hot? Sometimes, when he touched my head like what you just did, I would feel that my heart starts to beat fast. I never had this kind of feelings before.”

Kazumi put an arm around her waist, “Fool, when you really care about someone, you will have these feelings. This is very normal.”

“But why I did not feel that way toward you? I only have these feelings when faced with senpai.”

“This is certainly different.” Kazumi did not know how to explain.

“Why is it different?” The girl looked at her wide-eyed and confused.

“Ai, come on just tell me?” Kazumi was helpless.

While these two girls were chatting with ease, another girl, Aiko, was facing the biggest fear of her life.

—

After hearing the footsteps on the stairs, her first reaction was to immediately flee from this place. When she was about to put her intention into action, she was surprised to find out that her feet were totally unable to move.

Not only that, she discovered in fear that, besides her head, she is unable to move her whole body. Even such a simple movement like slightly moving her finger can not be achieved.

It was as if her body was not her own.

She wanted to scream, but the footsteps on the stairs were more and more clearly heard, leaving her instinctively shut her mouth.

One step, two steps, three steps, four steps...

Her nerves tightened as the footsteps kept on approaching. She tried desperately to lift her foot, but she can't feel anything as if she had no feet. This kind of deep fear that rose from the bottom of her heart made her bit her lip, silently cried. But even after biting



the lip, she still can't feel anything.

“Are you scared?” Without any warning, a voice softly sounded in her ear.

“Aa!” Aiko finally broke down and screamed loudly. Suddenly the scream echoed throughout the dark empty hall, creating goosebumps all over the body.

When Aiko woke up again, she first saw the rotten chandelier hanging in the middle of the hall. She was in despair; She was still in that damn hall.

She desperately grabbed and pulled her hair, hoping to wake up from this nightmare.

Suddenly she vaguely heard someone's voice from the outside.

Her heart was immediately piqued, but after an intense shock just a moment ago, she felt dizzy in her head instead of petrifying fear.

After repeated consideration, she decided to go watch the two people talking. Perhaps, these two individuals can help her leave this damn place.

So, she barefooted step by step toward the door.

Maybe it was just an illusion, but the closer she is, the more she felt like she was familiar with the voice. This feeling was getting more and more intense.

From a window closest to the door, illuminated by the moonlight, she saw some people were standing near the entrance.

At this time, one of them spoke again, “No matter what, I will not allow you to hurt her. I really like her.”

Hearing the man’s voice, Aiko jumped out of her skin. The man turned out to be Mito Toyokawa.

‘So, it’s this bastard who took me here.’ Aiko was furious and immediately forgot her fear. Under the impulse, she absolutely has no consideration, ready to rush out to get even with him.

Just as Aiko was about to run out of the door, she suddenly heard a man’s voice.

“So what, did you forget how she treated you today?” It was a very hoarse voice and strange to her.

Aiko immediately stopped, although she was acting on impulse, she is not stupid. She immediately realized that Mito Toyokawa and this man are her kidnappers.

“But...” Mito was very hesitant.

“This is not the first time for you. Weren’t you having fun with the last girl? Don’t worry. No one will know.” That voice was very convincing.

Hearing this, Aiko was startled and furious. She promised herself that after she escapes this place, she must report these two scum to the police.

‘The first thing to do now is to get out of here before they notice that I’m already awake.’ Aiko thought.

She was a bit lucky that they didn’t tie her hands. Aiko quietly returned to the hall and looked around for a way out.

# Chapter 56 - Nightmare

---

In one corner of the hall, there was a bathroom, and there she saw a window with no glass.

As long as she's careful, she could climb out from there. Aiko thought, so she immediately went inside. Because there was no light, she could only walk very slowly, hoping to find a foothold to step on.

Having not much time, as the two men will be back soon, Aiko was both worried and nervous. Unable to find a foothold, without any choice she suddenly jumped up immediately grasping the edge of the window with her two hands.

She was delighted in her heart, and immediately propped up on the wall that was covered with tiles wanting to step on it to leverage her up.

Just thinking about it made Aiko exhausted, when suddenly she felt her feet suddenly stepped on something. Not thinking what it was she immediately wanted to step on it to leverage her up.

"Do you need help?" With that, a voice resounded, as she felt her ankle was suddenly gripped by two cold hands.....

Aiko exclaimed loudly, and quickly looked back, immediately seeing a figure standing beneath her. Although the surrounding was dark making her unable to see the person's appearance, the person seemed to be laughing at Aiko.

The girl was immediately filled with horror as she wanted to kick him back, but the man's hands were still gripping on her feet tightly.

“It's too tempting. I can't resist anymore.” The man with a hoarse voice said as he stroked Aiko's feet. He even started breathing heavily.

“Mito Toyokawa, you bastard, come out....” Aiko was still being held by the man's cold hands and was being pulled down by this perverted man. She would rather face that Mito guy than this sick man who was touching her.

Aiko shouted, but after a short while has passed, Mito Toyokawa still didn't appear. She thought that both her hands were unable to hold on any longer.

At that moment, the man burst into laughter, “Toyokawa, someone's calling you, why aren't you answering it? That's too rude, right.”

After a while, no one still answered.

A few second later, the man suddenly loosened his hands and let go of Aiko's foot.

Getting free Aiko immediately jumped out and made a surprise attack, using her shoulder to push the man, and unexpectedly knock him down.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, Aiko immediately bypassed him running to the direction of the hall rushing out.

She thought that she would see Mito in the hall, but there wasn't anyone there. No time to think about it, she instinctively rushed to the door.

Only two steps away from the door, her heart was filled with joy. So long as she escapes this damned place, she had the confidence to get away from them. After all, her sports scores were the best compared to the girls in her class.

But at that time, she suddenly found herself unable to move.

Just like last time, except for her head, the upper and lower body couldn't move.

This strange phenomenon made her feel despaired again.

At that moment, a person slowly came out of the bathroom and came before Aiko.

Under the flickering light, Aiko saw the man's appearance.

And at that moment, she forgot her fears, and very angrily cursed at the man: "Mito you bastard, why do you want to kidnap me?"

Mito looked at her silently, then burst out laughing, "I'm sorry,

I'm not Toyokawa."

It was a very hoarse voice.

"You, who are you?" Aiko was almost speechless, she clearly remembered, this was the voice of the man holding her legs in the bathroom. But why does he look exactly like Mito?

"You can call me Hisanaga." This man claimed that he was Hisanaga was like a wolf who had cornered his prey, looking at her with eyes full of lust.

Being seen like this, Aiko was embarrassed and felt like she wasn't wearing any clothes. "I don't care who you are, call out that Mito bastard, I have a matter to talk with him." Aiko turned around to escape his from his eyes.

Hisanaga chuckled, "Toyokawa, do you hear me? She's looking for you again. If you don't come out, she won't understand what's happening."

After about five or six seconds, someone finally spoke." Why do you have to force me out? I didn't want her to see me in this kind of situation."

Aiko hearing the sound of Mito immediately got angry, and searched for the position of the sound, but still didn't see him.

At that time when Aiko was trying to find him, the boy named

Hisanaga spoke up, “Aiko, I’m here.”

“You, you’re Mito?” Aiko was too frightened to say a word. After a while, she suddenly realized, “so you’ve been playing around with me, actually what have you done to me?” She found that she still couldn’t move her body.

“Don’t you understand? I’m Toyokawa, but also Hisanaga, but strictly speaking, Toyokawa and Hisanaga are not the same person.” Mito suddenly said in a hoarse sound, and his expression instantaneously turned into a sinister smile.

As he spoke, the flickering lamp suddenly went dark, and then light up again, and continued alternating between light and dark.

“Enough, don’t play tricks with me, I’ve seen through you.” Aiko was a little afraid, shouting loudly.

“Aiko, what he said is true. He’s Hisanaga, and I’m Toyokawa. Why are you doing this to me? If you had just been willing to accept me, things wouldn’t have become like this.” Mito reverted to his usual personality, holding out his hand and stroked Aiko’s pale face.

“Don’t touch me! You monster.” Aiko screamed.

“You called me.....monster?” Toyokawa suddenly trembled, then his whole body bent over, body shaking more and more stronger.



Aiko was petrified, she knew that what she's dealing with was a real madman.

As she was at a loss, Mito suddenly jumped up. Aiko didn't react, having her neck tightly grabbed by Mito.

"You bitch, If you dare say it again, I'll make you regret it 10000 times." A hoarse voice resounded. The man's eyes were blood red, facial muscles completely twisted and looked viciously at her.

"Uhh, let go.....I....." Aiko couldn't move, and can't beg to be freed.

"Bitch, I won't let you die, I'll fool around with you first." Hisanaga loosened his hands on her neck, long hands, effortlessly held down her head firmly.

".....Don't want to, let me go....." Aiko gasped desperately.

Hisanaga chuckled and began to unfasten the buttons of her pajama.

"No, stop....." Aiko cried.

"Bitch, I'm willing to engage with you, you should feel flattered."

Unfastening only one button, Hisanaga finally lost patience, and forcibly pulled open all the buttons of the entire pajama. Suddenly, a beautiful female body only wearing short pants was exposed in front of him.

“Gee, this bitch’s figure, looks very good.” Hisanaga’s eyes were filled with lust, stretching out his right hand, he gently touched her smooth and tender skin.

Aiko never touches her body, but at that moment, she felt like she was being touched by a corpse’s hand. It was a kind of cold sick filling that makes her skin dry up.

“Stop, I told you to stop!” Aiko, screamed while crying.

At that time, Hisanaga actually stopped.

Aiko thought that the second personality Toyokawa stopped him, looking at Hisanaga. She saw him quietly looking at the direction of the door, having a weird facial expression.

“I don’t care who you are, but before I get angry, you better quickly get your ass out here.” Hisanaga, with his hoarse voice, spoke a sentence towards the direction he was looking at.

# Chapter 57 - Attack

---

Aiko's heart was beating fast, listening to his tone, it seemed like there's someone outside. Unfortunately, her body could not move. Otherwise, she would surely turn around to look.

“Strange, how on earth did you find me?” With a strong voice, a middle-aged man opened the door and came in.

“Who are you? Why do you want to track me? Are you police?” Hisanaga said while, intentionally or not, went behind Aiko

“You can also say that. But I'm more high-level than those ordinary cops.”

“To tell you the truth, I am part of the Homeland Security, ability research center, head of the Tokyo branch, Jiro Yamahara. This is my identification.” With that, he took a yellow card that seemed to be an ID card, and threw it in front of Hisanaga,

Hisanaga is only slightly took one look and said to the man, “I don't care who you are. Since you are police, then I am sorry.” Without waiting to finish talking, he suddenly raised his hand, palm facing that man.

Aiko was surprised to see this action. That energy-saving light was suddenly flickering so much. It was so bad that it looked like it was going to burn at any time.

After a while, Hisanaga suddenly very surprised to say the words: “Why is it like this?”

The man smiled, “It’s indeed a parasitic body. It appears that your abilities can manipulate someone’s body at close range. In fact, by accident, I found this place has a surprisingly high value in fluctuations. Therefore, I know that in this vicinity, there’s someone with ability exercising his power.”

“Don’t worry, I’m not here to arrest you. People with abilities like us are very precious. I just want to take you back to the Headquarters. Of course, this also means that you will join our organization. People with abilities are given preferential treatment by the Government. As long as we obey and complete the mission that they give us. They don’t care about anything else, including the things that you are about to do to this girl. Moreover, there will be someone to pick up the pieces for you. This proposal is good, right? If you agree, I will wait for you outside, until you finish your business here.”

“Is this real?” Hisanaga seemed a bit excited.

“I can guarantee you.”

Aiko began to despair. Although there were things she didn’t understand, she also understood that the man that she initially thought would save her from Hisanaga unexpectedly used her as a trade. Thinking about this, the tears that she had just quelled, fell down again.

“So, you’re also someone with abilities. No wonder my attack didn’t work on you. Can you tell me what are your abilities?” Hisanaga looked at the man.

“I’m sorry. Before you actually join our organization, I’m not going to tell you anything. So, have you considered it?”

“Alright, I promise....” Before he said the word “you,” Hisanaga suddenly raised his hand toward the man. For a time, the energy-saving lamp violently flashing again.

Shortly thereafter, Aiko heard a scream coming from the man.

“Why are you doing this?” After a pitiful yell, the man angrily asked in a loud voice.

“Quite simply, because I don’t believe a word you say. Go to hell.”

Perhaps it was an illusion, but Aiko felt a faint air current blowing from the side, after that it blew from behind her body. At the same time, that energy-saving light went out completely.

“Stupid guy, do you really think you can defeat me?”

In the dark, Aiko only heard the sound of that middle-aged man loudly shouting. Shortly thereafter, she heard the painful groan of Hisanaga coming from behind her.

“I’ve already told you. You can’t defeat me. While your ability is good, it’s still too far when compared to me. Since you don’t agree, I’m not going to be polite anymore. However, you can rest assured that I will not kill you. Because a parasitic body like you is very rare, I want to take you back to do research.”

Listening to the tone, the middle-aged man seemed to be winning. Aiko was somewhat rejoiced, even though this man is not a good person, it should be better than if she falls into Hisanaga’s hand.

As soon as she finished this thought, suddenly she heard the middle-aged man screaming again.

She was terrified and didn’t know exactly what happened.

“You, you actually have two parasitic bodies?” The middle-aged man was surprised and angry.

“You guessed it right. We’re triplets. Unfortunately, when we were born, Hisanaga and I died in miscarriage. But luckily, we also have this good brother Toyokawa. We are the Trinity.” In the darkness, Aiko never heard a man’s voice.

“You, you listen to me. I don’t have any evil intention toward you. I really would like you to join our organization. Just consider the previous accident void, I assure you that the conditions are still valid.” The middle-aged man looked at the unfavorable situation, hastily changed the statement.

“It’s too late. Previously we were indeed tempted by your proposal. But in the end, we decided to kill you, just to be safe.” Mito walked over to the middle-aged man.

“Don’t fool around, my companions are near, and they’ll come at once. As long as you let me go, I’ll let bygones be bygones.” Seeing Mito coming closer to him, the middle-aged man shed cold sweat.

But Mito ignored his words and continued to approach him step by step while his two hands were lifted up, not down.

“You, who are you? I....” Just when Aiko and the middle-aged man were completely desperate, suddenly a “bam” sound was heard, and then came Mito’s painful groan.

While the two of them still puzzled about what happened, the previous “bam, bam” sound was heard by them in quick succession.

While Aiko didn’t see and understood this scene, Jiro Yamahara soon realized that those “bam, bam” sound were the sound of a body being hit.

Sure enough, after the sound was finished, Mito’s painful scream continued to be heard.

Compared to Aiko's feeling of lost, Jiro Yamahara was pleasantly surprised. Although Jiro didn't know who is the mystery man in the dark, at least, one thing is certain, the mystery man is Mito's enemy. As long as the mystery man win, perhaps he can escape this disaster. On the other hand, he was astonished at the abilities of the two Mito, and unexpectedly did not realize the existence of the fourth person in the room. If that person is an enemy, it would be a terrible thing.

Five minutes later, those terrible blow finally stopped. The dark Hall suddenly returned to normal.

Jiro Yamahara's body was sweating nervously, who is winning?

But soon he knew the result. The loser is Mito because his body can move again. The girl who stood not far from him is also the same.

After his ability is restored Jiro Yamahara's confidence returned. Although he almost died at the hands of Mito, it was only because he was unaware of Mito's other parasitic body, who sneaked attack on him. Now that his ability is restored, he doesn't fear anybody anymore.

"Who are you? How did you get in here?" Jiro Yamahara looked at the mysterious man in black and asked.

But the man ignored him, and simply went to the energy-saving light to play with it, seemingly wanted to fix the lamp.



“Hey, why don’t you answer my question?” Jiro Yamahara was very upset. One should know that even the head of the police department would normally yield three points toward him. But this guy had the nerve to ignore him.

The man paid no attention to him and continued to fix the lamp. Jiro Yamahara is angry.

# Chapter 58 - Rough Treatment

---

After a while, the energy saving lamps suddenly flashed, and soon, completely went back to its normal brightness.

“Fortunately, it didn’t burn.” The man said something to himself.

As the man turned his head, Aiko covered her mouth and looked at him in disbelief.

“Kid, you were scared, right? Sorry, I’m late.” Masashi smiled at her.

At that moment, Aiko’s mind was blank, as she couldn’t believe what happened, and immediately tears poured down on her face.

Almost instinctively, she rushed towards him with incredible speed and threw herself into his arms. Shortly after, an earth-shattering cry sounded on his arms.

“Don’t worry, it’s all right now.” He touched her gently on the head.

Hearing it was all right now, Aiko clasped around his waist and cried even more loudly.

Forget it, let her cry it out, so as to avoid any trauma.

After five minutes, Aiko's weeping sound slowly disappeared. She simply collapsed unable to completely stand up, and Masashi put his hand around her waist to help support her.

"So you haven't left yet?" Masashi put his arm under Aiko's lower part of the body and looked at the middle-aged man lightly.

The middle-aged man with very strange eyes looked at him, "Who are you?"

Masashi looked at him but didn't say anything.

"Since you don't want to tell me, forget it. But I want to ask you another question, how did you come in, don't tell me...you've been here from the very beginning?" It was the only thing that Jiro currently most concerned about.

"No need to guess, I came in right after you. Haven't your parents taught you to shut the door first before doing bad things?" Masashi sneered.

"You....." Jiro was furious, but immediately, he forcibly calmed himself down. Then coldly snorted and went toward the already beaten Mito Toyokawa without consulting anyone.

"Gennai-san, let's get out of here quickly, ok? I'm afraid." Aiko suddenly embraced him and had a hard time to talk while crying.

“Well, let’s go. Can you walk by yourself?” Masashi’s hand wiped away the tears on her face.

Aiko tried, and somewhat said worriedly: “I don’t have strength on my feet, what should I do?”

“I’ll carry you.”

Just after talking, suddenly Jiro’s shout could be heard: “You bastard, what have you done?”

Aiko was shocked and quickly embraced Masashi.

“Why do you need to shout when it’s late at night?” Masashi frowned.

Jiro glared at him, then opened Mito’s shirt pointing at his body and said: “You bastard damaged the precious complex parasitic body.”

“My hands are accurate, so he’s still alive,” Masashi said dismissively.

“But you’ve destroyed his parasitic body, later on, he would be just an ordinary man. Complex parasites have always been a very rare phenomenon, especially as you know he has two parasites in his body, do you know how precious that is?” Jiro very excitedly jumped up, his face flushed with anger.

“So what, don’t forget, that treasure almost took your old life. Moreover, other than leaving you with something harmful and use it to injure someone, I would rather destroy it completely.”

“You bastard....” Jiro fiercely looked at him, as he wanted a hands-on look on the specimen.

Masashi’s expression was, as usual, still revealing a look of coldness.

Feeling the tension between the two, Aiko was worried for Masashi. Although it wasn’t clear what Mito did in the dark, she knew that this middle-aged man was the same as Mito, have a very strange ability.

She didn’t know what to do, and only saw Mito, who was lying down on the ground. With this glance, she almost couldn’t help but cry out.

Seeing Mito’s clothes were pulled apart, exposing his naked upper body. Covered with many large and small scars that were clearly Masashi’s masterpiece. But these were nothing, the most surprising thing to her, was the spot below Mito’s left shoulder and his right chest, were two significant semicircular lumps that were obviously sticking out. Although on the surface it was covered by the skin and wasn’t that huge, the outline of the skin was exactly the same shape of that of a human brain.

But, in that two flesh lump that resembled the human brain,

there appear to be several fist marks, and practically only the dark bulge parts were beaten up flat.

She was now beginning to see what Jiro meant by “parasite” was.

After a long time, Jiro finally loosened his clenched fist.

Jiro for so long, felt like he was completely seen through by the boy. Although he couldn't be sure what power this boy possess, strangely, he subconsciously didn't want to fight this boy. Now that things are like this, he didn't want any more setbacks.

He looked coldly at Masashi, “If one day you were to land on my hands, I will make sure you regret your manner today.”

“You really are talkative. You must be in your mid-life crisis I presume?” Masashi had an indifferent look.

Jiro coldly snorted, and put Mito's entire body on his shoulder, and then walked towards the door. Before leaving, he glanced at Masashi and walked out of the door.

Not fighting? Masashi was a little bit disappointed.

“Let's go, kid.” He said as he put Aiko on his back.

The girl lying on his back didn't say anything but tightly held his neck.

Because Masashi's motor broke down halfway, he had to take a taxi, and now walked to the stopped car on the road.

Walking for about 15 minutes, even Aiko could hear the sound of cars.

"Hey, am I heavy?" Aiko, all of a sudden, asked softly in his ear.

"Not that heavy, at least lighter than a pig."

"Hateful guy." Aiko laughed, being a little unconvinced, she increased the strength around his neck.

"If you go on like this, I'll spank you."

Having heard this, the girl didn't know what to think, suddenly turning red, and instead the hands that were holding Masashi's neck became tighter.

Masashi thought she was still scared and had to go along with her. Anyway, with his thick skin, except for being a little uncomfortable, it was nothing.

In a few more minutes, Masashi finally arrived at the road.

Waving his hands several times on the road, managing to only wait for a few moments. He stopped waving as no car stopped.

Masashi was impatient, so he walked in the middle of the road to wait.

After a few minutes, he saw a medium freight vehicle pull up.

“What are you doing, do you want to die? If you want to die, then just go jump off a building.” A thirty-year-old driver stuck his head out of the window and cursed.

Masashi walked towards the door, single-handedly opened the car door, then grabbed his chest collar and said to the driver: “You now have two options, one to carry us back, two is to let me beat you up. Quickly pick.”

The driver thought that he encountered a robbery, immediately turned pale and was frightened.

“I, I have no money, please don’t kill me, I really have no money. I only have so much....” The driver tremblingly pulled out a few crumpled bills from his pocket.

Looking at his embarrassed expression, Aiko couldn’t help but laugh.

“Shut up, just give us a ride, who wants your money? Your money isn’t even enough to save you, but still have the nerve to take it out.” Masashi was too lazy to care for him, opening the rear door, holding Aiko, sat down inside.



“Quickly drive,” Masashi told the driver Aiko’s home address after shutting the door.

At this time, the driver believes that the two only wanted a ride. Suddenly feeling relieved, but in desperation, had to go to the address that Masashi said.

“Gennai-san, how’d you find me?” Sitting in the vehicle, Aiko suddenly remembered a question.

Masashi pointed at the coat draped over her body, said: “there’s something in that breast pocket, take it out.”

Aiko put her hand in the pocket, and really touched something.

“What is this?” Aiko looked surprised at this GAMEBOY-like thing.

Masashi took it, clicking a button above, and gave it to Aiko.

“See the red point on it? Masashi asked.

“Ah, then what does that mean?”

“That point means that the signal’s source is here.”

“What’s the source?”

“The feet bracelet you wearing on your feet. Saying that in your hand the signal tracker, and the feet bracelet you are wearing is the thing that transmits the signal. That’s the so-called tracker. I just found you through this thing, do you get it?”

“What, you put a tracking device on me?” Aiko was surprised and angry.

“Hey, kid, what’s with that attitude, if not for that thing you may have been eaten already. Do you think this is cheap? In order to make you wear it, I specifically asked people to make it look better. But its signal range is only two kilometers, in order to find you, I run around the streets and finally even my motor broke down. You really don’t know how to appreciate people.” Masashi said as he yawned.

Aiko was silent, bowed her head as she looked at him and thought about things.

After a while, Aiko suddenly whispered the words: “Thank You.”

Masashi laughed, stretched out his right hand and twisted her cheek.

Aiko blushed, immediately dodge and scold the laughing guy. “Indecent guy.”

The freight vehicle drove for about an hour, and finally arrived where Aiko lived.

When Masashi notified Aiko that she arrived at her place, he found that she had fallen asleep.

Without any choice, Masashi carried her out of the truck.

“I had wanted to give you two, but your car really stinks.” Passing through the driver’s seat, Masashi shoved ten thousand yen to the driver.

The driver couldn’t believe there were such benefits and immediately grabbed the bill.

“Thank you, I’m very grateful.” The driver suddenly smiled.

Masashi no longer paid attention to him, and then went to the apartment door holding Aiko.

# Chapter 59 - That Morning

---

The young girl woke up when the sunlight shone through the opened curtained window onto her. She routinely looked at the bedside alarm clock.

Ah, it's 10:30 already.

Well, anyway, going to school now is pointless, as only the afternoon classes were remaining. Thinking of this, the girl wanted to continue sleeping with a clear conscience.

She suddenly felt that it was a bit strange as if the bed became very crowded.

She turned around, and her brown eyes turned wide, and then her brain completely stopped working.

Was she lying next to a boy? And the distance between the two was close enough to the point that she could feel the breath of the boy on her face.

When the girl was about to scream for help, she suddenly saw the boy's face. At that moment, she remembered everything that happened.

It turned out that everything wasn't a dream.....

When Aiko completely calmed down, she couldn't help but stare at the sleeping boy.

He's not like those handsome type of boys but still had a very good-looking face.

She remembered that a few days ago a few of her friends helped her find a candidate to disguise as her boyfriend. At that time, she didn't know who mentioned him. But later, they agreed on the guy.

Aiko remembered that they even evaluated him, in fact, even her heart now approves of the guy.

He was a very special boy. Perhaps calling him a boy is inappropriate because he was far too mature for his age and also have the so-called extraordinary temperament. A person who she could only watch his back and unable to reach him.

He wasn't like those boys around her that wanted to get closer to her, and please her. In his eyes, she was only just a "kid". This point was the thing that made her very angry.

However, he, in her most desperate time of need, saved her. She still remembered that wonderful feeling when she tightly leaned on his back.

Unwittingly, the girl's face was getting closer to the boy. When suddenly the boy's gentle breath lightly touched her sensitive lips, her face suddenly became very red. However, she didn't pull away, but slowly, slowly, little by little, getting closer.....

When outside the door, a soft knock came, Masashi suddenly woke up.

He looked at the girl next to him because she didn't wake up.

Masashi was afraid of waking her up and gently got out of the bed.

Walking over to open the door, seeing Asami standing outside the door, looking at him a bit strangely, his eyes still secretly watching Aiko, who was lying on the bed.

“Aiko?” Asami first asked.

“She didn't wake up. What time is it?”

“Almost 11 o'clock.”

“So it's already noon. Where's the two girls?” Couldn't believe that he slept for so long, it seemed like he ran too much last night.

“Ryoko with Ai went outside. They just went to buy some food back and is now preparing to make lunch. Do you want to go wash your face?”

“Ok.”

Masashi yawned, and closed the door gently.

Seeing that Masashi went into the bathroom, Asami thought for a moment and opened the door to Aiko's room.

Asami went towards Aiko's bed, carefully watching the sleeping girl, and after a while suddenly burst into laughter.

“Don't need to pretend, I know you're awake.”

Hearing her laughter, the sleeping girl immediately blushed.

“How'd you know I was awake?” Aiko embarrassingly looked at her, and immediately covered her head with her sheet.

“How can people be asleep when their eyeball like yours move around, so I understood at a glance that you were just pretending to be asleep. Well, get up now.” Asami smiled as she opened her sheets.

“Really so obvious?” Aiko nervously looked at her.

“Okay, don't worry about it. Just hurry up, Ryoko and the others are waiting outside.” Asami laughed.

Listening to her talk, made Aiko calmed down.

“Ami.” Aiko was changing her clothes as she suddenly let out a cry.

“What’s up?”

“He...Why was he sleeping.... beside me.” The sound at the end of her sentence was faint.

“He, who is he?” Asami squinted her eyes, grinning at her.

“Hateful fellow, you know who I’m talking about.” Aiko was shamefully angry, throwing herself towards Asami and all of a sudden tickled her.

“Yeah, don’t....ha, I admit I’m wrong....ah!” Asami feared this move, and in less than three seconds, immediately begged for mercy.

“See if you still dare play around with me.” Aiko’s small nose wrinkled.

“You guys always immediately come to use this trick. Ah, no, I’ll tell you.”

Asami moved three feet away from her. “Last night Gennai-san came back holding you, we were shocked. We asked him what happened, and he just said that you were kidnapped by Mito Toyokawa, but soon was discovered by police, and that police caught Mito. And he was only there to bring you back from the



police. He also asked us not to tell others about it. Because he heard from the police, that Mito seems to be very close with some bad guys, and in order to catch those people, the thing that happened can't be spread, so as not to startle them."

"Aiko, was that true? Were you really abducted by Mito?"

Watching Asami's puzzled look, Aiko almost couldn't bear to tell her the matter last night. But recalling last night's conversation, she finally bears it down.

"It's true, that Mito Toyokawa bastard kidnapped me. But there are a bit out of things that he said, in fact, it wasn't the police who saved me. Actually, the one who really saved me was just him alone." When talking about Mito, Aiko was infuriated, but when it came to "him", the tone immediately became as gentle as silk.

"So it's true? That....did that Mito guy...you...." Asami nervously looked at her face.

"Fool, of course not. But if he had come a little late it would be hard to say." Thinking of the scene, Aiko still felt the chills.

Listening to her talk, Asami was immediately relieved.

"Right, you said that the person who rescued you was Gennai-san, but how did he save you? In addition, how did he find Mito?" After Asami calmed down, she immediately asked a series of questions.

“I’ll tell you later. You still haven’t answered my question, why was he....lying together with me?”

Listening to her question, Asami exposed a strange smile, “You have the nerve to ask? Last night, Gennai-san lay you down on your bed when your hands suddenly clutched tightly on his clothes. We tried several times to take your hands off, but instead, you grasped him more and more tighter. Because we were afraid to wake you up, we had to tell Gennai-san to sleep together with you. But that fellow actually didn’t want to. He said that a boy and a girl sleeping together is bad. If people find out, they will refer to him as an old cow eating a young grass. I still don’t understand what problem that guy was talking about.”

“Later, without any choice, I told Ryoko and Ai to sleep together on the floor, so the room was filled with the five of use, and at that time he was quiet. That guy was in a very bad mood as if we were all boys, and he was the girl. Thank God you didn’t see his look, or you would have been mad at him.” Stopping there, Asami still remembered the look he made. Aiko couldn’t help but laugh. He really was a jerk, but she seemed to feel that it wasn’t surprising that he did that. Perhaps he was also an odd person. Thinking of this, the young girl was a little overwhelmed.

# Chapter 60 - Clue

---

This Chapter is sponsored by Lachlan of US, Khalid of Belgium, And Andre of Australia

After eating the lunch, Masashi sent them back to school

Before leaving, Aiko unconsciously grabbed his lower hem, “Can you come to my house tonight?”

“Don’t be afraid, everything is alright. Didn’t Murashima say that she will stay with you? If there is anything, you can just give me a call, and I will rush over.” Masashi patted her shoulder and consoled.

“Em.” Aiko immediately complied, but she could not conceal her face from showing a disappointed expression.

Looking at her abandoned puppy expression, Masashi wryly smiled in his heart, and changed his statement: “I’ll pick you up from school in the afternoon, alright?”

“Really?” The girl’s spirit significantly lifted up.

Masashi nodded.

“Then I’ll meet you after school at the school entrance, and be on time.”

“I know. Gotta go, see you after school.” Masashi patted her on the head and then left after saying goodbye to the three other girls.

Seeing how Aiko reluctant to part with Masashi, the three girls can't help but look at each other with wonder.

They had never seen this girl is so dependent on one person.

Just because he can't accompany her, she became disappointed like this? And because a few words from that person, she became excited like this? Is this the lively, cheerful, and doing something without any regard to the boy Hasebe Aiko?

“Let us go.” When Masashi's back was completely gone, the girl turned around and returned to her usual smiling face.

“Aiko, are you and him....” Kogure asked in surprise. The other two girls were also nervously watching her.

“I....quick....hurry up, if we're late, that spinster will start to curse.” The girl's complexion was dripping wet. Before she even finished her words, she was already running.

“Aiko, wait, make it clear to us. Don't run....” Murashima and Kogure started to catch up.

Hisoka Ai stood there, looking at the direction where Masashi left

with a complex look.

---

USA, New York, South of Manhattan, 5 km away from the famous Wall Street. On the third floor of a building, a middle-aged man wearing a long white gown slowly walked into the investment consultant company called “Chinatown.”

This investment company is not large, within the building, only the second and the third floor belongs to this company. The investment firms this size, on the Wall Street and the surrounding area, is abound.

Almost everyone knows that the Wall Street in the USA is paved with gold. Although only a few who can pick up gold in here, many continue to have such dreams. On the other hand, not many people will actually play, so they will give money to investment companies to invest. Therefore, such things supported many of this type of company.

From the outside, this investment company doesn't look any different from the other investment company. But if you look carefully, this small scale company actually have an abundant amount of beautiful staffs.

In this company, besides the male personnel who are responsible for handling the delivery, the rest are all female, moreover, almost all of them were beautiful women.

Because of this, the whole office area is filled with the smell of perfume and makeup.

Saw the middle-aged man walked in, the beautiful young lady at the front desk immediately nodded to salute him, "Good morning, Mr. Shen."

"Hello, I would like to speak to your boss." Chang'an handed her the hat.

"Do you want me to take you in?" The receptionist asked as she hung his hat on a nearby rack.

"No need, I'll do it myself."

"As you wish. If there is anything you need, please feel free to call me."

"Thank you."

The receptionist watch as he walked in. Regarding this mysterious middle-aged man, she has always had some strange imagination.

"Hello, Mr. Shen. Are you looking for the boss?" The glamorous female secretary wearing miniskirt saw Mr. Shen walked in, immediately greeted him with a smile.

“Please inform him.”

“Can you wait for a while? The boss is talking about something with the head of planning department in the office.”

Noticing her strange look, Mr. Shen exposed a looming smile.

“Then I will just wait for him here.” Mr. Shen casually sat on the sofa.

“I’ll get you a cup of coffee.”

“If you can, please give me a cup of tea.”

“Ok, please wait.” The secretary went to another room to prepare the tea.

After she steeped a good tea, Mr. Shen was quietly sipping the tea. Knowing that he doesn’t like to talk, the secretary didn’t dare to disturb him, and just lowered her head to continue to work.

After about half an hour, the General Manager’s door finally opened.

The people who came out were not the boss, but a very charming tall beauty.

She seemed not to see Mr. Shen, who sat on the sofa in the distance, but slightly nodded to the female secretary and hurriedly walked away.

The other two clearly saw the strange flush on her face at that moment. Her breathing also seemed somewhat short, plus a little messy hair and wrinkles on the clothes. The female secretary and Mr. Shen certainly understood what were the boss “talking about” with her.

The only difference was, the female secretary’s face seemed a bit odd. She glanced at the female executive, and tilted her head to the side.

Mr. Shen showed a thoughtful look.

Seeing that Mr. Shen walked into the office, the company boss looked like the cat who was caught stealing a fish, “Chang’an, sorry to keep you waiting for so long.”

Looking at this young boss who was too lazy to tie the button on his collar, Chang’an showed a faint smile.

“Little Rei, aren’t you afraid of AIDS?”

Reili, who was drinking coffee, almost choked to death.

Such a fearful middle-aged man, although he seldom speaks, sometimes a few words from him can make people want to commit



suicide.

“You’re not specifically come to talk about my physical health aren’t you?” Reili smiled.

“I have just received a call from master, he has found clues to those mysterious men in black.” Chang’an style is straight to the point.

“What? Is that right?” Reili suddenly stood up with excitement.

“That’s right. He gave a list of people who can help with some of the clues about this matter to me. I believe it wouldn’t be long before we can look at the details of these men in black.”

“His grandma, cool, really cool. Really worthy to be called the master!” Reili banged his hand on the table.

Thinking that the group will show up at any time, this strange terrorist-like enemy really makes Reili difficult to sleep everyday.

“This list is for you. If you need any help, just let me know immediately.”

“Don’t worry, I know what to do.”

“In these clues about these people, the password was just like the last time, just replace the last six digits to today’s date. Destroy this

immediately after you finish, we can't alert the enemy. The enemy seems to be much worse than we thought." Chang'an, from his pocket, handed him a small disk.

"I know that." Reili took the CD into his suit inner pocket.

"Another thing to tell you, your new secretary seems not afraid that you have AIDS. To avoid trouble, replace her as soon as possible. After all, this kind of drama thing is already old." Before going out, Chang'an left this sentences.

"Ai, it's already the fourth, it seems like too much handsome is also a sin. Unfortunately, I haven't played with her yet. She has a nice body...." Reili showed an incomparably sad expression.

Chang'an, too lazy to care for him, went out of the office.

# Chapter 61 - School

---

For three days, Masashi was like a babysitter picking up Aiko from school.

He now regretted what he said to her that day. Originally it was only for that agreed day only, but he didn't think that kid would ask him to pick her up from school the next day. She even allegedly said that when something happens he would rush over every time, that fellow just like in the film exposed an expression that of an orphan being left behind. And her classmates, especially Asami would coordinate and show an expression that of a person interrogating an ungrateful boyfriend.

Their performance of a melodramatic show made Masashi so that he would want to curse. But thinking that she had been in such a big shock, he had to put up with it, making him meet with her for several days again.

It was not until the fourth day that something happened, one that would have nothing to do with Masashi.

In the afternoon, as usual, Masashi would hold a newspaper in front of the school entrance waiting for Aiko when Asami suddenly came out.

“Gennai-san, Aiko's participating in a club activity today. She's afraid you might wait for her for too long, so she told me to take you inside and wait for her there.”

“That kid joined a club, never heard her mention that before,” Masashi said while folding the newspaper.

“She’s participating in the cooking study club, just joined yesterday. Later you have the luck of having a delicious meal.” Asami exposed a meaningful smile.

“Regarding this, I won’t hold back and give my opinion. According to my experience, generally, a girl’s cooking ability and appearance are inversely proportional.”

“This fellow’s unable to tell good from bad, if Aiko hears you say that, it would truly be the end with for you two. She for you joined the cooking club. You should also know that she has never participated any club activities in school.” Asami discontentedly curled her lips.

“For me? You’re thinking too much. I’m at best, nothing but her babysitter. Don’t say anymore, let’s go, let’s go find a place to sit and wait.”

Asami looked curiously at him, then led him inside.

This was merely the benefit of knowing Asumi, as this was the first time Masashi entered this school. Because the students in this school were either a noble or have a rich family, the security here was tight, and usually, it would never allow outsiders to enter.

Masashi walked and habitually observed the surroundings.

Worthy of being an elite school, the interior compared to the exterior was just too different. There was an advanced teaching building, library, a beautiful indoor gym, a world-class indoor stadium, circular track, underground parking and more advanced facilities. This ostentation, even for some famous universities, would be considered mediocre.

At this time, it was the end of the school day, so more and more student from inside left. Among these were people affectionately kissing in public, male and female students cuddling together were also a lot. Its openness is simply couldn't be compared with the public school that Masashi attends.

When Masashi and Asami arrived at a circular corridor, Asami let him sit in the corridor on either side of the chair, as she was going to ask Aiko, when she'll leave.

Masashi agreed in a high leveled tone and readily took out a newspaper.

Reading for about 15 minutes, Masashi suddenly heard a very loud noise in the basketball court, raising his head, and only saw that place surrounded by a group of people.

Masashi, who was reading the newspaper, was a little bored, so he went over to see what's happening.

Just one look and Masashi lost interest in watching.

It was a very simple matter; seven boys were encircling a European student. No one in the crowd speaks out for the student, and some even smiled while finger-pointing at him, purely seeing this as a play.

School violence wasn't unusual in Japan when compared to schools in the United States where they were more common.

Masashi never thought of himself as a righteous person, so he completely didn't intend to interfere with the matter.

"Gennai-san, there you are, making us look for you. Really." Aiko with Asami, Ryoko, and Ai saw Masashi in the crowd. Aiko couldn't help but pout, complaining.

"Did the club activity that studies how to kill using food end?" Masashi went to greet the other three girls while slowly withdrawing from the crowd.

"Hateful, it's the cooking study club, the study isn't meant to kill people using food." Aiko very flirtingly protested.

"It doesn't matter if it's good, let's go quickly. I'm a bit hungry, so I can't wait to get home for dinner."

"Tonight, stay in my house to eat, okay? I just learned a new cuisine today." Aiko showed an expression hoping that he'll agree.

Her face reminded Masashi of Rumi's appearing when she's asking him to eat the food she made. "In a month, I presume that you would send your fellow students to the hospital for a period of time because of food poisoning."

"Hateful guy." Aiko couldn't help but pinch his arm.

Masashi's thick skin became plump, as he temporarily massages his arm.

"Gennai-san, what's happening there?" Asami strangely looked at the surrounding students.

"Nothing, just a group of kids venting their excess energy."

When they were just about to go out of the basketball court, when Masashi with his sense of hearing that far surpasses that of an ordinary person heard a sentence that made his eyes blink. Because of this sentence, he stopped.

"Do you know the lifeless guy there?" Masashi turned around and asked them.

"Who are you talking about?" Ryoko asked.

Masashi pointed at the front.

The four girls were a little curious and went towards the crowd

to see.

After a while, the four came back. Ryoko said: “The person you just mentioned should be the transfer student who just transferred just recently, His name is Zhangming Xian.

“He’s Chinese?”

“Yes, his father was a Chinese-American, he was studying in the United States, and transferred here last month. But he’s very timid, so he’s often being bullied. The people hitting him are problem students in this school, but their backgrounds are very deep, so even the teachers don’t stop them.” Ryoko went on.

“In other words, just now I didn’t mishear it wrong.” Masashi suddenly said dismissively.

The four girls were puzzled when Masashi quietly returned to the crowd again, who then, arrived at the forefront.

When he came into contact with the person who obstructed people, he clearly noticed the besieged US transfer student Zhangming Xian hugging his head tightly using his hands, and body curled up while lying on the ground. As several male students around him constantly kicking him, one of the tallest student wearing high quality shoes stepped on the transfer student’s head fiercely kneading his head, and sometimes spitting on him.

Masashi was very familiar with this scene, when he wasn’t



reincarnated in his body, that cowardly Hirota Masashi would be bullied like this by high school students every day. But this wasn't the reason why Masashi returned once more.

“What did you just call him?” Masashi went to the front and asked the tallest boy.

“Who are you? You're not a student of our school.” The boy looked at his uniform.

“It doesn't matter who I am, if I heard correctly, you just called him a Chinese pig, is that right?”

“What are you going to do about it? Before I get angry, go away to the side.” Several other boys also stopped and looked at him.

“I'll ask again, did you just call him a Chinese pig?” Masashi still tirelessly asked.

“I did, if you trouble me again, I'll hit you.” The boy spat at Masashi.

“Yes, you're on the line.” Masashi gently stepped sideways evading the saliva, as his face had a strange smile.

“You....” The boy hadn't finished talking when his whole body was suddenly sent flying....

Nobody knew what happened, the crowd of students only saw him suddenly sent flying more than two meters to the left, and then fell to the ground motionlessly.

The field suddenly became quiet, followed by screams coming from the girls while the entire basketball court was immediately messed up.

“What do you want?” In the remaining six boys, a boy wearing glasses asked Masashi out loud.

“Didn’t you see it? You can come again to find out.” Masashi sent out a chilling smile again.

## Chapter 62 - Under Attack

---

“This guy’s together with the Chinese pig, let’s go flat them together.” Another tall boy with his heart gelled cried out.

After he finished speaking, several people immediately surrounded Masashi.

“Stop it, all of you stop.” Aiko rushed at them loudly saying something.

“Aiko, do you know this guy?” The boy with glasses looked at her.

“He’s my friend, please don’t do it. It’s just a misunderstanding.” Aiko said anxiously.

“Ikeda, he’s really Aiko’s friend, don’t be unreasonable.” Asami also ran.

“I don’t care who he is, in short, he started it, in any case, we won’t let him go.” The boy with his hair gelled sneered.

“Fukui, don’t go too far.” Asami looked at him coldly.

“Aiko, although he’s you friend, the person who started it was him, if we let him go we’ll lose face. But I’ll give you face, if he’s willing to get down on his knees and beg us for mercy, I might be

able to let him go.” Ikeda wearing his glasses looked at Aiko’s charming face.

Gennai-san kneel and beg? With that guy’s character, he would rather die than do so. Aiko was just about to openly plead again, just as she was opening her mouth when suddenly the teenager suddenly spoke up: “Leave, this matter has nothing to do with you.”

His expression was the same as before, but Aiko and Asami clearly felt that at this moment, Masashi looked like a different person that they have never seen before. With only those words, the two girls couldn’t let out a sound.

“Boy, it seems you’ve awakened. Now kneel down and lick my shoes, or it may be too late.” Ikeda sneered.

“Has anyone told you, your mouth stinks. Let’s do this quickly. I still have to go home for dinner.”

Ikeda flew into a rage, “kill this motherfucker!”

Suddenly, the six boys rushed.....

Five minutes later, looking on the ground there were six boys continuously groaning, everyone couldn’t believe their eyes.

Are we in the film 「Fist of the North Star」? Otherwise, how could this scene that could only happen in the movie be done in real life?

Nobody could see how Masashi struck down the men, but everyone saw, that all the boys who rushed at him, even if it just looks like he only slightly touches them, the boy that he bumped would definitely fall down to the ground.

Most people felt horrible to these young boys who one by one continuously fell flatly down to the ground.

When he beat them up, the sound of the impact when making contact with the muscle made people feel the chill on their spine.

No matter how the boys screamed for mercy, the boy would still continue and attack every one of them, without mercy, only until he beat up the seven one by one was he finally willing to stop.

He only used less than 10 seconds to take down the six people, but he actually spent five minutes beating up the people.

In that five minutes, Aiko and Asami totally had the time to stop him, but at that time, they like everyone else, had their mind go blank, and were only able to look until the end.

After he had beaten up all of them, Masashi suddenly turned around and looked at the transfer student, then step by step walked over towards him.

“Thanks, Thank you....” Seeing Masashi come closer, the transfer student was shocked and scared. But knowing he had

helped him, he quickly thanked him aloud.

But he wasn't finished, Masashi suddenly grabbed him by the collar with both hands, his whole body lifted up, and then mercilessly pressed on the basketball beam.

His back was leaning on the beam in pain making him call out in pain.

"You, what do you want?" He said, with a half-skilled Japanese accent, while his face was in panic as he looked at Masashi.

"What do I want?" Masashi suddenly increased the strength in his hands. Zhangming xian suddenly called out again.

"You ask what I want? I should ask you what you want. A man beating people up doesn't matter, but you didn't even dare fight back, like a dead dog being bullied by this group of garbage. Looking at you, not only they, even I would think about beating you up." Masashi looked at him with glowing bloodshot eyes.

Zhangming Xian had no time to think about how this Japanese boy could speak Chinese, but also fluent. At that moment, he saw Masashi's ferocious look and was scared unable to let out a sound.

Looking at the pale, trembling boy, Masashi suddenly felt a little tired. He wasn't tired physically, but heartfelt tired.

He sighed, then released Zhangming Xian's collar, turned around

and walked away.

Along the way, the crowd of students as to avoid trouble, automatically moved one meter away from him, no one dared to approach him.

Seeing Masashi get farther, Aiko was biting her lips and quickly followed. The other three girls had no choice but also follow them.

A dynamic music echoed in the fast-food restaurant, a teenager with four girls sitting together to eat. Strictly speaking, only the boy was eating. As for the four girls, they looked at him very strangely.

“Don’t you have anything you want to say to us?” Finally, the girl with a very cute look and skin as white as jade couldn’t help but speak first.

“Today’s chicken seems harder to eat than usual.” Masashi, taking the last bite out of the chicken, carelessly threw away the bones, then calmly said to her.

“Is that the only thing you want to say?”

“Moreover, it’s difficult to drink soda. I’ve been wondering why so many people would love this traditional Chinese medicine like color as a beverage.”

The girl unconsciously scratched his fists, “Nothing else yet?”

“and so....”

“and so?”

“The conclusion is eating fast food isn’t good,” Masashi said while rubbing his mouth.

“You only want to say that?” The girl couldn’t bear it anymore and suddenly stood up.

“Aiko, not like this, you should persuade him slowly.” Asami immediately put her back to her seat. While Ryoko, who was beside her, comforted her.

Aiko, angrily sat down, as her eyes kept looking at Masashi.

“Do you know who you just hit?”

“I hit a human? Don’t have any impression of them.” Masashi continued to play the fool.

“You.....” Aiko almost pounded the table, but Asami quickly pulled her.

“Gennai-san, this time, you’re really in trouble. Those people’s background are very powerful, not only rich, but also know a lot of powerful people, especially that Ikeda, his father is an incumbent,



and has so much power so that no one in school dares to cause trouble for him.” Ryoko next explained.

“So it is. I know, if there’s nothing else I’m going home for dinner. You be careful on the road.” Masashi said as he stood up.

“What also eat rice? Do you really not understand the seriousness of the situation? Those people will certainly look for revenge, aren’t you even worried a little bit worried about it?” Aiko stopped him as she was both worried and anxious, tears almost falling down.

Masashi quietly watched her, and after a while, suddenly laughed again, laughing lightheartedly.

“Kid, whether you believe it or not, in this world, there’s no one I can’t beat. Rest assured, those young folks are only capable of enduring me.” With that, he walked passed her going out of the fast-food restaurant.

Seeing Masashi’s back, Aiko and the other girls again exposed bewildered eyes.

# Chapter 63 - Innocent

---

Some things, no matter what one does, would still come.

The next morning, Masashi was called to the principal's office.

Opening the door, he saw the fat principal and at his left side, sitting there was a stern middle-aged man.

Originally the principal was accompanying the middle-aged man with a smiling face, seeing Masashi, he immediately shouted loudly: "Gennai Masashi, what exactly did you do? Come quickly, Congressman Ikeda has especially come looking for you." If it weren't for the person sitting next to him, he would have pointed at the problem student and cursed at him.

Masashi's mouth twitched as he quietly walked towards Congressman Ikeda.

"Are you Gennai Masashi-san?" The stern middle-aged man unexpectedly used honorifics.

Masashi frown, then said dismissively: "I am Gennai Masashi, what brings you to look for me?"

"Gennai Masashi, what's with that attitude?" The principal was anxious as he breaks into a cold sweat. He was prepared, so long as Congressman Ikeda would be happy, he would immediately expel this problem student, so as to not stir up any trouble.

To everyone's surprise, this middle-aged man turned around and suddenly kneeled down before Masashi.

This almost made the principal's eyes fall out, and even Masashi was a little surprised.

"I'll teach my child a lesson, for offending Mr. Gennai, I beg for your Excellency's forgiveness." Congressman Ikeda's head was firmly against the floor.

Masashi calmed, saying softly: "After all, the person who first started it was I, doesn't Mr. Ikeda blame me?"

"I do not dare to, my son was extremely, stubbornly disobedient, so I must thank your excellency for educating him. In the future, I'll certainly teach my son strictly and ensure that something like this never happens again."

"Now that the misunderstanding's gone, Mr. Ikeda please give my regards to Ikeda student." Masashi quitted while one was still ahead, after all, this guy was still a congressman, in front of other he should still give him some face.

"Thank you for your Excellency's concern. If it's all right I'll go first, I'm very sorry for wasting your excellency's precious study time." Congressman Ikeda bent down and bowed down and again.

"Well, you take care." Masashi was tired of this hypocrite

formality.

“Gennai student, you....” With Congressman Ikeda gone, the principal looked at Masashi as if he saw a monster.

“Principal, if there’s nothing else I’ll go back to class.” Before he could finish, Masashi had proudly walked out.

“Good, good, you take care....” Principal wiped his sweat while smiling.

Masashi returned to the classroom but found no one there. Then he remembered that it was physical education, so students had to go to the field.

Without anything to do, he looked at his drawer and took out a book.

Not long before reading he heard footsteps coming from outside the door. He looked up and saw Mizato come in.

Because he was always looking towards the back, up until he entered the classroom, and only to see Masashi let out an evil grin.

Seeing Masashi, Mizato’s first reaction was to run out, but Masashi was already at the door waiting for him, he wanted to run, but a hand behind him immediately grasped his arm, pinning his whole body against the wall.

“ya!” Mizato immediately called out in pain.

“Mizato-san, we haven’t spoken for a long time, have you been well?”

“You, what do you want?” Mizato was frightened while his complexion turned pale. He didn’t know when, but he suddenly saw Masashi’s flexible foot.

“Nothing, I just want to chat with Mizato schoolmate.”

“I beg you, let me go, please? My hand hurts.” Mizato said.

“Of course, as long as you don’t run.” Masashi then let go of his hand and smiled at him.

“What are you trying to do?” Mizato was uncomfortable.

“If I’m not mistaken, the class right now is physical education. I would like to ask, why did Mizato-san come back here?”

“I’m, I’m a little uncomfortable.” Mizato evasively said.

“If I’m not imaging it previously, didn’t you put something in my drawer?”

Hearing his words, Mizato's face immediately turned pale, "I, didn't..."

But before he finished, Masashi suddenly grabbed him by the collar, "last time didn't that bastard Nagasaki order you to frame me?"

"You, how do you know that?" Mizato stared at him.

This little rascal is really just a kid, with only one try he already fell into the trap, Masashi sneered in his heart.

"That's so, and he told you to put the fountain pen secretly in my drawer, right?"

Mizato nodded reluctantly.

"Didn't I ask you a question? Answer me." Masashi gave him a stern look

Mizato was frightened by him and quickly answered yes.

"I can let you off, but you must tell me what happened that day in detail. I want to know how he set me up."

"Are you going to let me go?" Mizato said skeptically.

“Your grandmother! Told you to quickly tell me, you’re too talkative.” Masashi was a little impatient.

Mizato didn’t dare ask anymore, and immediately laid it out.

Just listen to a few words, Masashi couldn’t help but doze off already. Listening to him for a full fifteen minutes while constantly saying it wasn’t his fault, begging for mercy and some nonsense that he regretted committing the crime.

Once he finished, Masashi finally let out a yawn. Then lazily said: “Mizato, you’re the most stupidest kid I’ve ever seen.”

“What?” Mizato looked at him, puzzled.

“Listen to this,” Masashi said as he took out his cell phone, and then lowered his head provokingly.

Not long after, a record of their conversation could be heard from the phone, and its content was just Mizato being accountable with the alleged incident.

Hearing the tape, Mizato knew he was tricked, and immediately rushed to grab the phone. But Masashi kicked off the ground.

“You think I’m so bored that I’d even listen to a three-year-old? Guess what’s going to happen? Nagasaki asked such an idiot to be the ringer, is the most fatal mistake he made. Now let’s go to the principal, and if you can get Nagasaki involved, then maybe you’ll

be off the hook.” Masashi jumped off the table and walked to the door.

Mizato suddenly ran in front of him, stopping at the door and loudly said: “Give me the phone!”

Masashi sneered, “If you were me, would you do it?”

“Give me or I....”

“Otherwise, what, you’ll jump on me? Or die in front of me?”

Mizato suddenly pulled out a knife from his body, pointing at Masashi and exclaimed: “I, I’ll say it again, give me the phone.....otherwise, I...”

Masashi looked at him, “You can try.” Then step by step walked towards him.

“Don’t come, I told you to stop.....stop!” Mizato hysterically cried.

Masashi walked over and looked at him, quietly watching him, not doing anything.

After a while, Mizato suddenly dropped the knife, kneeling in front of him as he cried, “I beg you, let me go.”



“I don’t need people to take responsibility for what you did.” Masashi expressionlessly said, then turned around and walked out of the classroom.

Behind the sound of Mizato crying more and more loudly can be heard.

“Senior, what’s going on with you? Are you sick?” Rumi gently touched his forehead.

“Nothing, just thinking of something.”

“Brother, what happened to that Mizato now?” Kazumi made a cup of tea placing it before Masashi.

“I don’t know, maybe taken away by his family.”

“Good, now senior’s name is finally clean. Just thinking that that Nagasaki could do such a thing, it’s outrageous.” Rumi said angrily.

“I already told you, that transfer student’s not a good person.” Kazumi very calmly drank some tea.

“You guess how will the school deal with the two of them?” Rumi asked.

“Mizato that fellow would certainly be urged to quit, as for

Nagasaki, hard to say, probably nothing will happen.” Kazumi sneered.

“Why?”

“Because in the evidence only Mizato admitted his crime, as long as Nagasaki simply denies it, nothing can be done to him. Moreover, rich kids like him would curry the school favor beforehand, so why would they pursue the matter.” Masashi said next.

“Could it be that we’ll just let something like this pass?”

“That’s hard to say.” Masashi suddenly exposed a playful smile.

# Chapter 64 - The Dim Light Of The Night

---

This chapter is sponsored by Anonymous

“Brother, are you going to pick that girl in the afternoon?” Kazumi suddenly asked.

“Yes.”

“How low are you going to continue picking her up?”

This question has also caused Rumi to eagerly watch.

“It should be another day or two. I think that’s about it.”

“I’m afraid you won’t be able to stop picking her up, after all, she is the sister of teacher Naoko, how bad could she be?” Kazumi said passive-aggressively.

“Hey, don’t speak as if I’m going to buy her goldfish will you (TL: Goldfish is slang for pedo)?” Masashi didn’t understand what was it that made her angry.

“Did you really never attempt with that girl?” Kazumi stared at him.

Truly deadly, even the serious word like ‘attempt’ came out. “Frankly, I have no interest in the little kid.”

“What kind of girl are you interested in? Is it a woman like teacher Naoko?” Kazumi pressed the matter step by step.

“Do I look like I’m horny? How could kids these days ask this kind of question.” Masashi rolled his eyes at her.

“Other people are curious about you. Brother, tell me.” Kazumi used the soft and hard method. Rumi also came helping her launching an offensive eye contact from the side.

“Kazumi, you set a bad example for Rumi.” Masashi wryly smiled.

“Don’t change the subject, quickly talk.”

“I don’t know what kind of woman that I like, at least, for now, I don’t know. Maybe one day I’ll meet a woman who I want to be buried together with, it means I’ve found the one.” Masashi said dismissively.

“What kind of answer is this?” Kazumi was very unhappy.

“Well, I’m going back to the classroom, you two also need to hurry up.” After that, he stretched himself and went toward the door.

Kazumi started to pick up the lunch boxes, seeing Rumi in a

trance, then patted her on the shoulder, “What are you thinking?”

“I think senpai has something on his mind today.” Rumi woke up from her daze.

“With that fellow’s character, if he refuses to say, nobody could guess what’s in his mind.”

“But you can rest assured, it seems that he doesn’t have any interest in that girl.” Kazumi suddenly turned and grinned at her.

“I....I don’t know what are you talking about, I....need to go....” The Kendo girl blushed like blood, stood up and left in a hurry.

“Little fool, let me tell you, that guy in some ways is quite slow, and sometimes you have to learn to take the initiative. Otherwise, he will never understand.” Kazumi said these words behind her.

Hearing this, Rumi’s body involuntarily paused for a moment and then hastily ran downstairs.

After she left, Kazumi suddenly sighed softly and then continued to clean up.

“You must be proud right? Gennai Masashi.” In the hallway, Masashi encountered a gloomy-faced Nagasaki.

“Today you are just alone? That’s very rare. Where’s your group

of fans?”

“All of that is thanks to you.” Nagasaki looked at him coldly.

Masashi looked at him and burst out laughing, “I initially have no feeling at all about it, but seeing you like this, all of a sudden I think that this is something that should be welcomed. I’ve said this before: that was a very poor play. Especially since you used this idiot actor Mizato, that’s the biggest mistake you made.”

“You are right. It was my mistake. But what can you do, as long as I flatly deny it, they can’t possibly deal with me.” Nagasaki sneered.

“I think you misunderstood. I did not think that this would impact you at all. That idiot just happened to be in the doorstep, so I grabbed him to prove my innocence. My account with you hasn’t even started yet.” When it came to the last sentence, Masashi looked at him dismissively.

“You....”

“People have to take responsibility for what they’ve done. I left this sentence to Mizato, and now, I leave it to you.” With that, Masashi bypassed his side and walked to the classroom.

Nagasaki watched him gradually walked away, at that moment, he suddenly felt as if he did something wrong, messing with someone that shouldn’t be messed with.

When he was about to arrive at the classroom, Masashi suddenly changed his mind and without another word, he turned and went downstairs.

When he walked out of the school gate, a blue “BMW” suddenly came toward him.

“Mr. Gennai, if you don’t mind please come aboard.” The car window open, revealing a beautiful bright face of a beauty.

Masashi took one look at her and then opened the front door to sit in.

“Where do you want to go?” Sakurai looked at him and said with a gentle tune.

“Just drive, anywhere you want.” He turned on the radio.

Sakurai no longer spoke, quietly started the car.

“I forgot to appreciate your effort, thank you for helping me deal with Ikeda.” In the moving car, after nearly half an hour of silent, Masashi said something.

“Your welcome, this was what we suppose to do.”

“Do you know what day is today?” Masashi suddenly said some

irrelevant words.

Sakurai wanted to say: “Sorry, I can’t think of anything.”

“Today, actually there’s nothing important, it’s just the anniversary of the death of my friend.” Masashi dismissively said.

“I am sorry.”

Masashi smiled, “It has nothing to do with you, you don’t need to apologize. Previously, every year at this time, I would visit her. But I didn’t go this year.

“Do you have some matters that makes you unable to go this year?” Sakurai’s voice was gentle as water.

“No, I have many free times. It’s purely a matter of heart.” Masashi looked at the scenery outside the window in a daze.

Sakurai paused for a moment, and then quietly said: “My father once said, life is but dozens of years. If someone arrives at his or her death door with little remorse, that is a happy thing.”

Masashi said nothing, just quietly looking out of the window.

After what seemed to be a long time, he turned to smile at Sakurai, “Thank You. Perhaps you’re right, things that you want to do, you have to do it. Don’t think too much, or it will only



increase your worry. Please, I would like to go home.”

“Alright,” Sakurai smiled at him and put the car back.

Five minutes later, Masashi wearing casual clothes walked out from the house.

“Sorry to keep you waiting.” He opened the door again to sit in.

“Where do you want to go now?” Sakurai looked at him.

“Sorry to trouble you, the airport, please. I hope we’re not late.”

“Ok.” Sakurai immediately started the car and sped away toward the airport.

Late at night, in a mountainous area in southern Nepal, a teenager sitting quietly in front of a white tombstone.

Looking at this piece of erect stone, the teenager suddenly remembered an old song that he listened in a church.

I’m not here, please don’t stand at my grave crying, because I’m not sleeping. I’m everywhere along the wind. I’m the glistening white snow. I’m the light of the Sun that brushes the field. I’m the stars in the night sky....

Please don't stand at my grave crying, because I'm not here, "A Wei, I am Lei Yin...." The boy felt his throat went dry.

"It's been ten years. I haven't come to see you in ten years. I have been hesitant to come to see you again. Because I'm not that Lei Yin. I hope that you're not here either, otherwise, my ash underneath yet I am still here, this is so unfair to you." Finished this sentence, the boy was silent for a long time.

"No matter what, I still came. Tonight, I'll be right here with you, just like before, to accompany you to see tomorrow's sunrise." With that, the boy quietly drunk the wine, leaning against the stone.

Tonight, the dim light of the night was like a river.

# Chapter 65 - First Meeting

---

When Masashi came back to the hotel, it was already two in the afternoon.

Calling the airport to ask for a moment, the first flight to Tokyo was at 5 o'clock. Because it was still early, Masashi decided to walk outside.

Nepal was a beautiful place; most of the country was not affected by industrial pollution. It was full of green trees and flower, as well as the air being crystal clear.

Not long after, Masashi began to feel a little bit hungry, then remembering except eating on the plane, from yesterday to now he hasn't eaten anything. So he had no choice but to turn back and go to a nearby restaurant.

Eating half of the time, Masashi suddenly felt like he was being watched. Looked behind him, and sure enough, he saw a little girl approximately 8-9-year-old standing nearby staring at him.

The little girl's face was as white as milk, eyes big and round, wearing very good textured cashmere, looking like a well-made doll.

Face almost looked that of an Asians, but also having a Nepal person's delicate facial features. So the first idea that Masashi had was that she wasn't from around this place.

The little girl was actually not afraid, as Masashi moved closer and closer towards her.

Masashi was amused, looked at her while pointing at an uneaten dessert on the table, referring if she wanted to eat it?

The little girl shook her head, walked towards Masashi, and finally spoke, speaking which was actually English. Masashi was also a little bit surprised.

“You.....Who are you?” The little girl’s tone was very stiff, and it seemed like it had been a long time since she had last spoken.

“Did you parents not teach you, before asking for someone’s name, you have to tell them your name first,” Masashi said with a smile.

The little girl shook her head, “I....don’t know, they’re already dead.” Her expression was serious.

“I’m sorry.” Masashi gently touched her head.

Regarding this action, the little girl seemed like she had very much enjoyed it, and like a kitten gently closed her eyes.

“I have two names, a Chinese name, and a Japanese name. You can call me Lei Yin.” When it came to his name, Masashi felt that

he was both familiar and unfamiliar with it.

“Lei, Lei....” The little girl said softly, and then unblinkingly looked at him.

“I’ve told you my name, so you should also tell me your name.”

“.....They call me Amy.”

“Amy? Where are you from?” Although she spoke in English, Masashi always felt like she was Asian, so who knew she had such a western name.

The little girl didn’t answer, and just looked at him puzzled.

“Do you want to eat this?” Masashi didn’t ask again but pointed at the cake and pastries on the table as he asked.

“Ahn.” The little girl didn’t refuse again.

At that time, Masashi sipped his tea and watched the little girl’s lovely, but clumsy movements as she ate dessert.

“Amy, why are you here? Who are you?” When the little girl was eating something, a female voice could suddenly be heard.

Masashi turned to look behind and saw a very beautiful Eurasian

beauty aggressively looking at him.

“Are you Amy’s guardian?” Masashi gently put down the cup.

“Who are you? What do you want?” The beautiful woman first pulls Amy to her side, as she looked at him with hostility.

“I’m just an ordinary tourist, but as you can see, I just asked this kid to eat.” Masashi hated dealing with an anxious woman, if you really treasured this kid, no matter what she wouldn’t have been running around all over the place.

“Amy, are you okay? Did he do anything weird to you?” the beauty ignored him, crouching and carefully examining the little girl.

Masashi smiled bitterly, her tone clearly regarded him as a pervert. He didn’t want to care about her, so he stood up and left.

But before he could even take two steps forward, his foot suddenly felt heavy.

He looked down and saw Amy. At that moment, she felt like a baby bear clinging to his legs and wouldn’t let him go no matter what.

“Lei, don’t go....don’t go....” The little girl stared at him with pleading eyes

.

“Amy, quickly let go!” The beauty was surprised and furious.

Amy didn't pay attention to her and continued clinging tightly on Masashi's thigh.

Looking at the little girl who didn't like to speak, Masashi's eyes was filled with a faint warmth. He squatted down and touched Amy's small head and said: “Hey, kid, you are so bad, oh.”

“Lei...., don't go.” The little girl looked at him pitifully.

The beauty next to him was surprised, she had never seen Amy as she was now, being dependent on one person. She was very clear that Amy had a severe autism, apart from her father, she was never close to anyone. Even they were rarely able to make her say a few words. Her father was worried about her condition, so he looked for a lot of famous psychologists trying to treat her, but maybe because of her trauma during her childhood was too big, so even now hasn't even made the slightest progress. In this case, she was powerless.

But now, in front of this high school-like teenager, Amy unexpectedly didn't want him to leave? Thinking of this, Alice Lynn couldn't help but look at the teenager.

Masashi absolutely didn't know Alice was watching, as he was

busy comforting this kid. Finally, after a lot of explaining, Amy's small hands finally let go, but her eyes still looked at him closely.

“Go call this number and you can find me. Will you call?” Masashi wrote his phone number on a piece of paper and handed it to her, demonstrating a motion of calling him.

The little girl nodded, holding the small piece of paper on her hand tightly as if she was afraid that it would fly away.

“Well, I really gotta go. If there's something, then give me a call, later must be obedient.”

Ami nodded again, her eyes blinking as she looked at him.

Masashi smiled, patted her little head then left the restaurant.

Until he was very far away from the restaurant, Masashi seemed to be able to hear the little girl calling his name.

Gently breathing, Masashi waved in front of the taxi.

“Where are you going?” The taxi driver asked in broken English.

“Airport,” Masashi said in Nepal.

When the driver heard Masashi speak in Nepal, he was suddenly



very happy. He even couldn't help but ask him a few question. For example, which country was he from? Why can he speak Nepal so well? Did he come to travel in Nepal and so on. He also took great pains to introduce to Masashi several famous attractions as well as some strange customs. Later he also explained to him where and when to take a cheaper taxi ride, which hotel was good, and which hotel wasn't very healthy and so on. His enthusiasm seemed to show that the two had known each other for dozens of years now.

Seeing this overly enthusiastic middle-aged man, Masashi had mixed feeling. If he had known this earlier, he wouldn't have fluently answered him with the Nepal Language, if he had done so, he wouldn't have had to listen to him for a long time.

When the taxi driver was still talking, Masashi looked through the rearview mirror towards the Restaurant where Amy was with the woman.

Looking behind, Amy had a very dull look. On the other hand, at that moment, the woman was holding her hand as she called for a taxi.

Not long after, a taxi opened up to them.

Masashi retracted his eyes, and when he was ready to tell this talkative driver to shut up and drive, suddenly, he heard a woman scream.

He quickly looked back and saw two men rushed out from the taxi towards Amy, when the woman screamed, one of the two men

forcibly pulled Amy into the taxi. While the woman unceasingly struggled, one of the men closed the door. Then, the taxi immediately left.

The whole thing took less than 5 seconds, and a few actually saw, so it didn't attract the attention of other people. But Masashi saw, he saw very clearly, that this was kidnapping.

"Immediately catch that taxi," Masashi exclaimed towards the driver.

"What happened?" the middle-aged man was still immersed in speaking.

"I told you to catch up with that car. Fast!" Masashi shouted.

The taxi driver couldn't believe that a man could have such eyes, he suddenly broke out in a cold sweat. And at that moment didn't dare say anything, immediately starting up the taxi to pursue in the direction that Masashi exclaimed.

# Chapter 66 - Warehouse

---

This chapter is sponsored by Anonymous

“Who are you people?” Knowing that escape is impossible, Alice Lynn gradually calmed down.

The two men didn't make any sound.

“Hey, I'm asking you, why do you kidnap us?” Alice Lynn cried aloud.

The two men still ignored her.

Never was her so lightly treated, if not for her hands being handcuffed, she would slap them in the face.

Seeing the pale face of the nearby Amy, Alice Lynn can only hug her gently.

“Don't worry, nothing would happen.” She said with a smile to the little girl.

Amy didn't make a sound, just looked at her blankly.

The taxi continued to move forward in silent, looking at the constantly disappearing scene outside the window, Alice Lynn felt gloomy.

After nearly an hour of driving, the taxi pulled up in front of warehouse dock.

It was an abandoned worn-out warehouse. In front of the warehouse, two deluxe cars parked.

The scene was very quiet around them, except to the faintly heard ship's sirens in the distance, there was no human voice.

Alice Lynn and Amy were held by the two men to get off the taxi and into the warehouse.

The driver also got off of the car and walked to the front of the deluxe car and entered it to sit in the driver seat.

In the dimly lit warehouse, only one incandescent light bulb was shining. Four men were quietly sitting there, sitting in the middle is a blond youth wearing a high-quality suit and a middle-aged man dressed in a gray suit.

“Nicole, it really is you, asshole.” Saw the blond youth, Alice Lynn shouted at once.

“Alice Lynn, this is so un-lady-like.” Nicole stood up, smiling.

Alice Lynn suddenly rushed over and tried to wallop his shoulder.

When she came, the two men were about to grab her, but Nicole beckoned with his hand to stop them.

After Alice had hit him a few times, Nicole reached up to her chin.

“Alice Lynn, you’re so beautiful. What a pity, why did you do this to me? You know, we have almost reached the marriage stage.”

“Who wants to marry someone who can only wag his tail like a dog in front of Adams?” Alice Lynn spat on his face.

Nicole’s face was expressionless as he wiped off the face of saliva, suddenly a “plop” sound, with a backhand he slapped her in the face, her whole body fell to the ground.

“You bitch, you think you’re so noble? Aren’t you following that guy Meng Zhuoer for his money? If I am a dog, you’re nothing but a bitch.” Nicole pulled her hair and drew her face to him before he exclaimed.

“What qualification a trash like you to compare yourself to Mr. Dai Fei? It’s ridiculous.” Alice Lynn sneered.

Nicole’s fury can’t be depleted as he slapped her again in the face until blood dripping on the corner of her mouth.

When he was going to hit her again, the middle-aged man standing next to him opened his mouth to stop him: “Nicole, don’t forget, Mr. Adams commanded you to do things.”

“Rest assured, Kiro, I did not forget. I’m just being intimate in front of my fiancée, that’s all.” Nicole let go of Alice Lynn and stood up.

The nearby Amy watched this scene in fear desperately wanted to cry but dared not make any sound. When Nicole left, she immediately ran to Alice Lynn wanted to lift her up, but unable to.

“What do you want?” Alice Lynn slowly stood up, looked at the middle-aged man who is with Nicole.

Kiro smiled like a gentleman and said, “Miss Alice Lynn, we are not here for you. It’s just that, this time, you and miss Amy had to go with us, including back to Switzerland later on. This is what Mr. Adams instruct us to do.”

“What do you really want to do?” Alice Lynn doesn’t believe they would involve so many people to grab them only to have a chat about the old days with her.

“You don’t need to worry about this, everything will be arranged by Mr. Adams. During this time, as long as you don’t make some irrational behavior, we will be very polite. I hope you don’t make it hard for us all.”

Though she didn't know what they're trying to do, at least it is safe for now. Alice Lynn somewhat relieved.

At this time, Kiro looked at his watch and said: "Miss Alice Lynn, we need to go now."

"Go where?" She immediately tensed up.

"Where? Of course back to Switzerland. The travel may be long. I hope you don't mind." Kiro said with a smile.

"But my luggage and passport are still in the hotel."

"I already sent someone to get it. Please." Kiro made the ladies first gesture.

Alice Lynn had no choice but to pull Amy's hand to follow behind her.

When they were out of the warehouse, Kiro said to Nicole: "You go with miss Alice Lynn and them. Remember, don't let that thing in the warehouse to happen again."

Nicole shrugged to indicate his promise.

Kiro led the three subordinates to one of the deluxe cars while Nicole and the other man put them into the other car.

“Alice Lynn, I hope you will find a pleasant journey.” Sitting with the two of them in the back of the car, Nicole watched Alice’s full of anger face and said.

Suddenly, the man who sat in the front let out a cry: “You’re not....” Still not finished, the man who was sitting in the driver’s seat sent a knockout punch to that man.

Although Nicole didn’t know what happened, he still reflexively took out a pistol from around his waist.

He was just about to point the muzzle toward that man, and suddenly he felt an iron-like clamp on his right hand seizing the pistol.

He looked up and saw a strange face smiling at him, followed by a fist that was constantly enlarged. Finally, he doesn’t know anything....

“Who, who are you?” Because everything happened so fast, Alice Lynn didn’t react when Nicole and his subordinate were being put down. She watched with surprise and fear at the mystery man wearing a hat.

That man ignored her, he quickly took the pistol from Nicole’s hand and fired two shots at the tires of the taxi and the deluxe car where Kiro sat not far away from there. The two shots directly hit the targets, all of a sudden, the two cars’ tire blew.



When Kiro and his men rushed out of the car preparing to return the fire, the mystery man immediately turned the car around and drove to the outside.

“Quickly get down.” That person thundered while driving.

Alice Lynn knew that that was an important time, didn't dare to ask, immediately bent down her and Amy's head.

Just two seconds after they lowered their heads, the right side rear view mirror was shot.

“Doesn't know how to shoot.” Alice Lynn seemed to hear the mystery man said such sentence.

“Who are you?” When the car was on the highway five minutes later, Alice Lynn looked at the man's head and asked.

“Ordinary tourist. Hey, kid, you okay?” Masashi took off his hat, turned around, and smilingly asked.

“It's you!” Alice Lynn covered her mouth in surprise.

“Lei....Lei....” The little girl saw him, suddenly burst into tears, and rushed forward.

“Hey, kid, don't move, I'm still driving....” Masashi was caught off guard by her and barely held the wheel.

# Chapter 67 - Decision

---

“That was really awful, nearly had my life hang up back there,” Masashi smiled bitterly, as he looked closely at Amy, who was tightly holding his arm.

“Who actually are you? Are you on Murphy’s side?” Alice looked at him nervously.

“I already said before, I’m just an ordinary tourist. I just hit it off well with this little kid, so I conveniently helped a little.”

“You really aren’t on Murphy’s side?” Asked Alice doubtfully.

“I don’t know who’s side you’re talking about, but you can believe however or whatever you want.” Masashi didn’t bother to talk to her and instead turned on the radio.

“In any case, I would like to thank you for saving us.” After a short while of silence, Alice softly said something.

Masashi smiled and didn’t say anything.

“Where do we go now?” After a while, Alice asked as she looked out the window.

“Find a place to clean up this garbage. Then find a place to rest.”

Although Alice was puzzled, she didn't ask anything. Although they were only together for a short time, she still had a strange sense of trust towards the boy.

Masashi parked the car in a place where there weren't any people, then afterward went out, and dragged out the man sitting next to him, then opened the rear door, also dragging out Nicole slowly.

"You, what are you going to do to them?" Alice looked at him a bit nervous.

"Miss, you watch too many movies. I didn't go here to destroy the corpse and leave no trace, I'm just leaving them here, do you want to take them with us?"

Alice's face turned red and felt like she was a little too nervous and overly sensitive.

"Little kid, was this guy very hard on you?" Masashi suddenly pointed at the ground and asked Amy.

Amy firmly nodded, "He's a bad guy, he just hit my sister."

"Then I'll help you take revenge, ok?"

Amy was puzzled as she looked at him.

“You close your eyes first in the car, remember not to peek.”

The little girl nodded and hobbled back into the car.

“You get in the car too, I’ll quickly follow back.”

Alice looked at him, followed back to the car.

After she had walked away, Masashi smiled evilly to the two on the ground, “Handsome boy? I do hate pretty boys.” Saying so as he fiercely stepped on Nicole’s face.

After half an hour, Masashi drove to an intersection, then hid the whole car in the bush. Finally, about another half an hour he took them and got off the car, and walked towards the town.

Reaching out and called for a taxi, Masashi sat inside together with them.

“Where to go?” The driver was a young man.

Recounting the time, he dared to answer using the Nepal Language, he said in English: “good nearby hotel.”

“Okay.” The driver was relieved.

Masashi smiled, this guy seemed to only understand the word

“Hotel”.

In the hotel room, Masashi looked at the fast asleep Amy, then turned around to see Alice and said:” Now can you tell me this little kid’s life experience?”

The beauty had mixed feeling as he looked at him for a while in silence, and then lowered her head, said: “Although I don’t know your goal, I would like to remind you that this has nothing to do with you. So, you still have time to quit now, or your life may be in more danger.”

“When I saw this kid’s possessions, I already knew that this kid must have a huge fortune,” Masashi said dismissively.

Alice looked at him in the eye and suddenly smiled: “If it was other people I might know what they wish to do, but you, I haven’t got a clue of what exactly you want to do, but since you want to know, I’ll tell you. As for what to do next, you should first think clearly.”

Masashi made a motion of invitation.

“Amy’s father, Meng Zhuoer-Dai Fei is Switzerland Concordia Group’s largest shareholder. The Dai Fei family in Switzerland was a very noble family with a long history. Meng Zhuoer was Dai Fei family’s current head of the household. He has an elder brother, Rolando. Mr. Meng Zhuoer also has two younger brothers, which are Adams and Murphy.

Concordia is the Dai Fei family's most important industry, which has two large refineries, three watch-making companies, eight mines and some super chain markets. It can be said the Dai Fei family in Switzerland, if not the richest family it would be equal to the richest family. Moreover, Dai Fei family's influence is no small matter in the Switzerland Political circle. "At this point, Alice paused slightly.

This was the so-called family sorrows, Masashi quietly sipped a cup of tea.

"When Amy was five years old, something happened, her mother committed suicide. Unfortunately, Amy witnessed her suicide process. This was also the main cause of Amy's autism. No one knew why her mother did so, but most people guessed that she had neurological problems. Since her death, Mr. Meng Zhuoer has been unhappy and hadn't married again, bent only on work. In just a few years, everyone slowly forgot what happened.

But just last month, Mr. Meng Zhuoer went to Nepal to discuss business, but unfortunately died in a car accident. I brought Amy to Nepal to let her see Mr. Meng Zhuoer for one last time."

"Why would that guy Adams send someone to kidnap you?" Masashi asked.

"I don't know, but yesterday I received a call from a law firm in Switzerland, they said that before next Saturday I had to go back to Switzerland because they want to read Mr. Meng Zhuoer's will in everyone's presence. I thought that maybe it had something to do with this."

“Next Saturday? That’s almost half a month, Kazumi would certainly scold me this time.” Masashi thought aloud as he smiled bitterly.

“What do you want to do now?” Alice looked at him.

“Quitting is not my style of doing things. Since I’ve already been wrapped up in this, let’s right away travel to Switzerland.”

“Travel? Do you know how much forces they have? You can die at any time.” Alice excitedly stood up.

Masashi laughed, “You may not believe it, but I think that my life just been too long.”

“You ungrateful guy.” Alice somewhat feebly sat down.

“Yes, now that I think about it I don’t know your name yet, I can’t call you woman, right?” Masashi lazily leaned back as he said.

“My name is Alice Lynn-Luo Diman, from Finland. What about you?”

“You can call me Lei Yin, I am Chinese, but strictly speaking a Chinese of Japanese nationality.” Since going abroad, Masashi had very handily gone back to his original name.

“Are you Japanese?” Alice asked, surprised.

“Haven’t you listened clearly, I’m Japanese-Chinese, ever since my rebirth to this family.” The rebirth to his family that Masashi refers to was the day when he was reincarnated.

“Oh right, Amy doesn’t seem like she’s Swiss, which country was her mother from?” Masashi suddenly remembered a question.

“Her mother is Singaporean. But Meng Zhuoer is actually half-breed, his mother was Korean. So when Amy was born, she didn’t look like an authentic Swiss.

“How about you, what mix are you?” Masashi had nothing useful to say.

Although she thought that Masashi’s question was a little strange, she still replied: “My mother’s Korean.”

It seems like Global integration didn’t just refer to the economy, Masashi thought maliciously.

“Okay, you get some rest, too. If nothing wrong happen, then, tomorrow we’re going to take the long flight to Switzerland.” Masashi stood up.

“Did you really decide to go?” Alice looked at him once more.



“Young lady, to be honest, you’re a little talkative. I’ll be at the next door, feel free to call me if there’s something.” Masashi waved his hand, as he went out of the room.

Alice silently watched him go.

# Chapter 68 - Passport

---

“Lei Yin, what purpose did you bring us to this place?” Alice puzzlingly asked.

After having dinner, Masashi took them to a slum area.

“Young lady, your too quick to forget, your passport has been taken by those guys from a while ago, how can you board a plane without it?”

“But do we have enough time?” the mixed-race woman then remembered about the problem.

“As long as you have money, we’ll be just in time. Wait inside, do not speak, let me handle everything.” Masashi took them to the front of a bar.

Going inside, a deafening music could be heard. Laser lamp in the dark, and a very large group of young people dancing energetically.

Alice previously often go to bars to play, so she’s accustomed to this kind of atmosphere. But Amy turned pale as she was scared of the loud noise.

“Don’t be afraid, kid, just cover your ears.” Seeing this, Masashi had carried her into his arms to comfort her.

Like a little bunny, Amy immediately shrinks into Masashi's chest, as she also tightly covers both of her ears.

"Let's go." Because it was too noisy, Masashi had to make a gesture to go.

Alice nodded and followed him.

Walking into a box, they closed the door, and suddenly, it became really quiet.

"Both you want?" Because the two didn't have the appearance of a Nepalese people, the waitress very tensely spoke a few simple English words.

"Get your manager to come here," Masashi said something in Nepal, and then easily gave her 50 rupees.

"Thank you, I'll call the manager right away, please wait." After having a deal with the waitress, she curtsied and walked out.

Not long after, a thirty-year-old youth came.

Like all young men, his first reaction was to look at the beautiful mixed race beauty, then looked at the ordinary faced Masashi.

"Hello, I'm the manager here, why are you looking for me?"

“Our passports were accidentally lost, you, if you file a replacement, it would take a long time, but we have something urgent to do so we immediately need to return home. So I would like to ask if you know someone that can get us a passport in a short amount of time.” Masashi said to get right to the point.

“This....” The manager hesitated as he looked at him.

“Money is not a problem, as long as it’s fast enough.” Masashi took out a hundred-dollar bill placing it on the table.

“You really want to get a passport?” The manager momentarily looked at the bill then immediately looked again at Masashi.

“I said, money isn’t a problem.” Masashi put down another bill.

“This is....” The manager had a very embarrassed look.

Masashi without saying anything put one more down.

“But....”

“That was the last one, if not, then we’ll have to find someone else.” Masashi was obviously rich, but he didn’t like being taken advantage of.

“You come with me.” The manager saw that he couldn’t squeeze any more oil, so he had to give up.

The young manager took the three out of the bar and later went to a dark and dirty alley, turning left, right, and afterward turned around. Finally, the manager came to a stop in front of a broken house.

The manager knocked on the door for a while, immediately a burst of condemning footsteps can be heard coming from inside.

“Bastard, calling this old ghost after midnight.” Opening the door, a bald man forty or fifty years-old came out.

“Why curse, old ghost? I brought you guests.”

“Guests?” The Oldman warily looked behind the manager to Masashi and Alice.

“Let’s go talk about it inside.” Said the manager.

The old man thought for a moment, but in the end, let them in.

Seeing that it was a dark room, Alice couldn’t help but a little bit worriedly look at Masashi.

Masashi shook his head to her, and then went ahead inside as he held Amy in his arms. As Alice only followed them inside.

After the Oldman had turned on the light, Alice found that the

house was actually much more spacious than it looks from the outside. The house was very messy. The place was filled with some white paper and transparencies scattered everywhere.

The old man in front of Masashi and Alice said: “What do you want me to make? A passport?”

Masashi nodded, “can you let me look at the samples?”

“Ok.” The old man walked into the room, and after a while, came out of the room holding several passports.

“I’m not bragging, but the passports that I make have had no problems.” The Oldman handed the stack of passports to Masashi.

Masashi looked at a few of them, then pointed to one and said: “I want this.”

The old man replies: “Good eyes, this type is the real blank passport. The stored goods in the market now are getting less and less. Therefore, the price for this is high. How many do you need?”

“Three. When can I get it.”

“The day after tomorrow.” The Oldman thought.

“No good, no later than noon tomorrow.”

“Okay then.”

After reaching an agreement with the price, the three was sent to another room as they take turns getting a personal photo shot, after getting a good photo shot, the three followed the manager as they left the old man’s house.

When the four went to the alleyway, they suddenly saw four young people smoking while they stood there talking. Seeing a few of them, Masashi immediately turned around and looked at all of them.

It seems like troubles coming, since Alice is a beautiful woman, walking in the middle of the night would always be a very dangerous thing, moreover in such a messy place, others would know with a glance that they’re foreigners, they would naturally desire to cause problems for others in anticipation.

Although Alice and the manager knew of this, when facing it for real, they would still feel scared.

The bar manager lowered his head down, pretending that he didn’t know them.

But not going too far, he was stopped by the four youths.

“Do you need anything?” The manager still played the fool.

“Nothing, just want to borrow some money from you.” One of

the youths with long hair pulled out a knife to play with.

“I, I don’t have money.” The manager immediately took two steps back.

“You don’t, but they have.” Another young man looked at Masashi while smoking a cigarette.

“I’m sorry, this kind of thing I can’t help you with.” The manager said and soon after went off to one side.

“Lei Yin, what should we do?” Alice whispered to Masashi.

“I have never snatched from anyone, but also haven’t been snatched by someone. I’d like to see if they have the ability to do it.” Masashi sneered at them, as he held Amy, who had fallen asleep while walking towards them step by step.

“Hey, foreigner, stop.” The long-haired youth stood in front of Masashi, as he held a knife while his hands were shaking in front of their eyes.

Masashi, without even looking at him, calmly continued and bypassed him.

“I told you to stop.” The long-haired youth was furious, immediately grasped his neck.



Just as he was about to catch him, a hand suddenly appeared out of nowhere and immediately gripped his wrist.

“Ka!” The long-haired youth wasn’t able to react to it, then a burst of noise came from his wrist, followed by a burning pain that can be felt after the noise was heard.

The Long-haired youth instinctively opened his mouth ready to cry out, when suddenly Masashi’s foot kicked his chin, sending his whole body two meters away.

“Pow!” the long-haired youth’s whole body fell down on the ground motionless.

The whole process only took less than two seconds, everyone who saw this, couldn’t believe the thing that happened right under their eyes.

After a while, the other three young men finally reacted, and rushed over as they roared. The young man smoking a cigarette ran towards him as he took out a dagger.

Watching the three rush towards him, the moonlight shining upon Masashi revealed his cold smile.

The manager was unable to believe what happened, while at the same time, Alice felt an upsurge on her chest. Again this boy once more gave her an unspeakable shock.

Yesterday, the boy rescued Amy, but she thought that he was only successful because of the sneak attack he had done. But thinking back on his course of action, such as disguising as a driver to attack, shooting Kiro's tires, suddenly pursuing them, he wasn't only reasonable and fair, but also invincible. Afterward, he dealt with Nicole to evade being tracked down, obtained a fake passport, and with the way he was so experienced, she couldn't help but think that he was a professional agent.

And now, he's facing three young people armed with lethal weapons, and he took them down in less than three seconds.

Alice didn't see how the youth got rid of them and only felt that before her eyes were light, followed by the strange noise of "Ka, Ka." At the same time the three Nepal youth fell on the ground unable to move, it felt like one of those Kung Fu movies shot several times in Hollywood that was overly exaggerated.

"Hey, let's go," Masashi called out to the two who were petrified with what they saw.

"You....you..." the bar manager felt like he was looking at a monster.

"Shut up." Looking down he saw the still asleep little girl on his arms, Masashi then glared at him.

The bar manager felt guilty and was afraid to look at him.

“Hurry up. It’s getting late. We also have a flight tomorrow.” Masashi said to the beautiful mixed-race woman, as he continued to move forward.

Like this Alice looked at his back with an extremely complex expression, and then slowly followed behind.

The bar manager who was looking at the four young people lying on the ground, suddenly shuddered, but also quickly followed them.

# Chapter 69 - Switzerland

---

Switzerland is located in central Europe, with Austria and Liechtenstein to the East, and Italy to the South as neighbors. To the West there is France and the last, they have Germany as their Northern neighbor. The population is about 7.09 million with 41284 square kilometers of land Area. A landlocked Country but famous for its clockwork.

At the same time, their beautiful scenery, their special status of “Permanently Neutral” country, and their Swiss bank unique “Bank Secrecy Act,” made many Billionaires willingly put their money into this small nation, or in the local settlements.

According to Alliance to combat financial crime data statistic, more than one-third of the world’s richest have their assets in the Swiss Bank accounts. Meanwhile, keeping the source of funds of the unknown customers is the most significant feature of Swiss Banks. Besides engaging in financial business to make money, the Banks also engage in lucrative capital management; Resulting in the capital inflows of about CHF 4.2 trillion into Swiss Bank’s vaults. Thus, Switzerland not only earns substantial management fees, but they can also use this capital for various financial activities of money begets money. Allowing this country of seven million people rich of “oil,” and prominently occupied in world’s list of top capital-exporting countries.

When Masashi trio came out of the gate of Zurich airport, it is already four o’clock in the afternoon.

“Finally arrived.” Alice Lynn said something to herself.

“Is it the feeling of turning over a new leaf?” Masashi smiled.

Alice Lynn looked at the lying in Masashi’s arms sleeping little girl, sighed softly, “So many things happened recently. However, the most pitiful here is Amy, who has lost the person who cared her the most, her father.”

Masashi touched the little girl’s silky smooth hair and said: “Come on, now is not the time to lament.”

After nearly two hours of bus ride, plus half an hour in a taxi, the three of them finally came to Meng Zhuo’er Dai Fei mansion in the north bank of Lake Zurich.

In this scenery of beautiful green lake, a large four-storey mansion erected under the golden sunlight, looking like a painting.

“Mr. Meng Zhuo’er likes the peace and quiet. Since Amy’s mother died, he moved here until now.” Alice Lynn said.

“He was a person who knows how to enjoy life. It’s beautiful.” Masashi is also the kind of people who enjoy life very much, so this was a heartfelt feeling.

Alice Lynn rang the doorbell before she walked to the gate. Two minutes later, a black-suited German man about 40 years old came out from the inside.

He opened the large iron door and politely said to Alice Lynn: “Welcome, Miss Luo Diman. Did miss Amy come back together you?” The man stated in a very authentic German.

“Hello, Mr. Bacon, long time no see. Miss Amy has come back safely, but because of the plane’s journey, she’s tired and fell asleep. I’d like to introduce you to this Mr. Lei Yin. He is my friend and has helped me a lot in Nepal. Lei Yin, this is Mr. Bacon. He is the Steward of the House, and has worked for Mr. Meng Zhuo’er for nearly twenty years.” Alice Lynn introduced them from the side.

“Hello, Mr. Lei Yin.” Seeing Masashi is a foreigner, the Housekeeper Bacon spoke to him in English, and politely extended his right hand.

“Hello, Mr. Bacon.” Masashi shook hands with him.

Seeing Amy lay in his arms, Bacon looked surprised, but quickly returned to normal and letting the two people inside.

Between the Iron gate and the Mansion, there’s a large garden in the middle, with a variety of flowers and plants, but most of it are types of roses. Under the Sunshine, it felt twice as bright.

The three people walked on the granite-paved straight path. Alice Lynn asked: “Mr. Bacon, did the body of Mr. Meng Zhuo’er has been brought back?”

Bacon's face revealed a sad expression as he gently said: "It has been shipped back. Mr. Rolando decided to hold the funeral this Sunday. I never thought such a thing could happen. Why a good people like Mr. Meng Zhuo'er encountered this unfortunate accident."

"Please don't be too sad, Mr. Bacon. Everyone was sad that such a thing had happened." Alice Lynn, while talking, couldn't help but take out packs of tissue paper to wipe her eyes.

In this heavy atmosphere, Masashi can't speak, just lowered his head as if thinking about things.

—

At 2 o'clock in the morning, the initially sleeping in the bed Masashi suddenly opened his eyes. Then, after he jumped out of the bed and wore his shoes, he immediately went out of the room.

Like a ghost, Masashi came into the corridor. Under the light illumination of the wall lamp, the surrounding was quiet.

He quietly listened for a movement on the upstairs and downstairs but found nothing.

Just an illusion? But how could he explain this uneasy feeling?

To such a master of the realm like him, his spiritual sense has gone far beyond the scope of intuition. If he feels something is wrong, then something is probably going to happen. This intuition can't be explained by mere words, but in his long life, Masashi has witnessed it many times.

Therefore, although he didn't find anything wrong with the place, he still went to the room where Alice Lynn and Amy two people shared together.

Masashi stretched out his right hand to the door, and then gently took a breath, focusing his spirit. After a while, countless of smoke-like traces of spirit that can't be seen by naked eyes slowly flowed from his right hand, through the door, and into the room.

This was the second time Masashi used this ability. The first time was when he saved teacher Naoko. Now, because there's a door that acted as the medium, the smoke-like traces of spirit were much faster than the last. In less than three seconds, the entire room has in Masashi's hand.

After finding out Amy and Alice Lynn were inside, Masashi felt much relieved.

Through this traces of spirit, Masashi can fully understand their present condition.

Although no one knew, this late at night observing the two people with clarity better than human's eyes, especially since both of them are females, Masashi always had a strange feeling, as if he



was like those peeping pervert. So, after determining the two of them were alright, he quickly recovered his traces of spirit.

Just as he was considering whether to continue to stay here or not, all of a sudden, a cell phone ring tone rang out from the inside.

In the dead of night, this ringing seemed very harsh. Thinking that the noise may wake the soundly sleeping little rascal, Masashi was a little angry.

When the phone stopped ringing on the third rings, Masashi, who, from the outside, vaguely heard movement inside the room, knew that Alice Lynn has picked up the phone.

Suddenly, a strange feeling arose in Masashi's heart. At the same time, "Bang" a loud sound of gunfire came from the inside....

# Chapter 70 - Gunfire

---

Masashi's first reaction was to kick the door down and following that he saw a huge room only being illuminated by an energy-saving lamp. Under the faint light, Amy was being hugged by Alice at the corner of the bed. Near them were pieces of glass from the window that fell on the ground, at the same spot was an obvious bullet hole.

Sniper. Judging just from that gunshot, it should be less than five hundred meters.

When Masashi was still with the Black Dragon, he didn't know how many times he had been sniped at, but it was very clear this time that the sniper might not go. So without thinking he picked something up and toss it towards the energy-saving lamp. The room immediately turned dark.

After he just extinguished the lamp, every hair on Masashi's body suddenly stood up. He was very familiar with this feeling and quickly rolled to the side. And sure enough, a bullet hit the place where he was just standing in place.

Masashi had cold sweats, his grandmother, for a long time hadn't played the shooting game for a long time.

His hand and feet crawled towards Alice, at his side he could see the mixed-race woman was trembling in fear as he said: "Hey, are you all right?"

“What’s happening?” The mixed-race beauty turned pale as she looked at him.

“Do you have to ask? Someone wants us to bleed. How about the kid, not hurt, right?” This was the problem that Masashi was currently most concerned about.

“Amy is okay, just a bit shaken.” Alice slightly opened her arms, to let him look at the little girl in her arms.

“Lei....” Seeing Masashi, Amy struggles to crawl towards him.

“Kid, don’t move, Alice, immediately call the police.”

“Oh.” Alice’s response immediately came as she picked up her phone to call the cops.

As Alice was reporting to the police, sounds of footsteps could be heard outside.

“Ms. Alice, what happened?” Bacon wearing a nightgown went to the entrance and asked. Behind him were a few maid workers.

“All of you get down, someone’s shooting,” Masashi said aloud.

His words immediately caused panic to the maid workers, and these people immediately didn’t dare to walk over, as Bacon very quickly lied on the floor.

“Who shot?” The German man soon calmed down and asked Masashi.

Masashi very much appreciated the man’s composure and told him: “The one at the other side is a sniper. For now, I’m not sure if he left. I’ve called the police, and the only thing we can do now is to wait for the police.”

“I got it. Mr. Lei Yin, is Miss Amy injured?” Because the room was dark, Bacon wasn’t able to see Amy.

“Rest assured, she’s fine.” Masashi crawled a few steps, grabbing Amy’s small hand to appease her.

After 10 minutes, five police cars came to the house.

Being sniped by a killer was no small matter, let alone shooting at the Dai Fei’s home of the former head, making the police much more anxious. After carrying on a large-scale search and evidence collection, besides for two bullets on the wall as well as penetrated glass window, the Swiss police was dismayed to find out that they weren’t able to find any clue leading to the killer.

The only thing they could do was to deploy more staffs to carry out surveillance on the house all day round. At this time, the whole house was suffused with a sense of oppression. The maids and workers that were working in the house were trembling all day long as they felt that their lives were on the line.

“Mr. Lei Yin, what are we gonna do now? If this continues, I’m afraid it would have a terrible impact on the Dai Fei family.” The next afternoon, Bacon with a worried look asked Masashi. Today he received the fourth resignation request from their workers.

Masashi put down the newspaper on his hand and look at him, said: “Mr. Bacon, have you ever wondered why there are killers sent to kill Alice or Amy?”

“This....” Hearing this, made Bacon at a loss for words.

Masashi revealed a meaningful smile, he continued: “I know you’ve probably guessed the reason to why these things are happening, but because of your identity and duties are unable to mention them. Relax, I believe that so long as the will of Mr. Meng Zhuoer is done, this matter will end. This is my intuition.”

Bacon looked at him deeply, after a while, he suddenly said something solemn: “Mr. Lei Yin, who actually are you? If it’s possible, I hope you can tell me.”

Masashi smiled back at his eyes, “I’m just an outsider. But there’s only one thing I can tell you, I’m standing on Amy’s side. Whether you believe it or not, that’s your problem.” With that, he picked up the cup and drank.

The German man silently watched the elusive boy, his face showing an ambivalent look.

Then, suddenly a maid came.

“Mr. Bacon, Mr. Rolando has come.”

“I know, I’ll go out now. Mr. Lei Yin, do you want to come and meet Mr. Rolando?” Bacon asked.

“With pleasure.” Masashi also followed standing up.

When Masashi walked a few steps, he saw Amy, who was watching TV come along and pulled his clothes right away.

“Lei, you go...where?” the little girl stuttered as she asked.

“Your uncle’s coming, do you want to meet him?” Masashi lowered his head and looked at her.

“Uncle.....” Amy shook her head.

“Then you continue to watch TV here.” Masashi didn’t want to force her to.

But when Masashi was about to leave, Amy still continued pulling on his shirt.

“Hey, kid, didn’t you say you didn’t want to come?” Masashi gently pinched her cheeks.

“Where Lei go....Amy go...” The child said, stressing each syllable.

“Really there’s nothing we can do with you, let’s go.” He took her little hand and finally walked forward.

Bacon watched them in silence. When Masashi came close, he suddenly said: “Mr. Lei Yin, you really are a wonderful person.”

“Wonderful, me? Are you sure I’m wonderful and not strange? Anyway, I don’t mind how other people look at me.” Masashi said with a shrug.

“You are mistaken, Mr. Lei Yin. You are the first person that made Amy dependent on. I imagine that Miss. Luo Diman should have told you about Miss. Alice’s case. Which is why I said that you’re a wonderful person.” Bacon said for sure.

“The first? Did her father not count?”

Bacon paused then said, “Mr. Meng Zhuoer is indeed very concerned about Miss. Amy, but you should know that as the head of a family like Dai Fei, it is hard to imagine how busy he would be. Moreover, ever since his wife died, Mr. Meng Zhuoer had become too intoxicated with his work, so he usually had too little time to talk to Miss. Amy to get along. Unfortunately, he had died, it would be an irreparable regret.” Speaking here, Bacon sighed.

When the two walked down the hall, Masashi saw that Alice was there, and sitting next to her was about a 40 years old, wearing a close-fitting striped suit, his hair combed a bit too much, and a slightly serious looking man.

Needless to say, this must be the brother of Meng Zhuoer, Rolando-Dai Fei

“I am sorry, Mr. Rolando, to have kept you waiting for so long.” Bacon walked up to him and saluted.

“Your too polite, Mr. Bacon.” Rolando courteously stood up and turned around.

“I’ll introduce you, this is the person I’ve mentioned to you, Lei Yin.

Lei Yin, this is Mr. Rolando-Dai Fei, Mr. Meng Zhuoer’s brother, as well as Concordia Group Executive General Manager of European operation.” Masashi is, after, the person she had brought, so Alice spoke first to introduce the two of them.

“Helli, Mr. Lei Yin. Listening to Alice talk, I heard that you’ve helped her a lot in Nepal. But to even think that Mr. Lei Yin is so young.” Looking at him, Rolando was really surprised of Masashi’s age.

“You flatter me, Mr. Rolando, it was just a breeze! Nice to meet you.” Although he didn’t know anything that Alice spoke to this



man, Masashi guessed that she should have told him that the two were kidnapped. The Mastermind is, after all, Rolando's brother.

“I received the news today. I heard Alice and Amy were attacked last night by a sniper, so I've come to look. Please rest assured that I have talked about it with the Mayor of Zurich, he said that he would track the person down, and I would never allow someone to hurt the Dai Fei family's people.” Rolando's tone was very firm.

Masashi found that since the moment he saw Rolando, Amy has been hiding behind his back.

# Chapter 71 - Visitor

---

Seeing Amy hiding Masashi, Rolando seemed a bit surprised.

When he walked toward her, the little girl immediately retracted herself behind Masashi, afraid to expose her head.

Seeing this, Rolando had to stop and kept his distance.

“Alice Lynn, Amy didn’t get hurt right?” Rolando turned to Alice Lynn.

“She’s okay. Perhaps she was still a bit frightened by last night incident.” Alice Lynn also saw that Amy was afraid of Rolando, said.

“As long as she’s not hurt, that’s good.” The middle-aged man nodded.

“Alice Lynn, did Mr. Bacon told you about the funeral arrangement? Several elders in the family have decided to hold the Meng Zhuo’er’s funeral in the Joyce memorial park the day after tomorrow.” Rolando looked at Alice Lynn.

“Mr. Bacon had told me about it. I will arrive on time.” Alice Lynn was silent after saying that.

“The dead are gone, I hope you will not be too sad.” The middle-

aged man comforted her.

“I know that since the accident of Mr. Meng Zhuo’er, you’re one of the saddest. I hope you take care of your health.” Alice Lynn said to Rolando.

“Rest assured, I’ll be fine.”

At this time, a maid came to Bacon and said, “Mr. Bacon, Mr. Adams have come.”

As soon as the several people present heard this, they all revealed an unnatural look. In particular, Alice Lynn, who unconsciously clenched her fist.

“Invite him in first.” Mr. Bacon was first to react.

After the maid had complied with the order, she went out.

The atmosphere in the room was a bit weird, no one was talking. Masashi can’t help but be curious about what kind of man Adams is, after all, he came to the Switzerland is also thanks to that fellow.

Not long after, a 30 something years old man in high spirits entered the Hall after being led by the maid.

Masashi previously saw Meng Zhuo’er photos, which showed an

earnest man who looked serious. Compared to his elder brother, Rolando is very similar in some ways. But this similarity does not refer to look. Instead, it's the serious and rational temperament.

Masashi through Alice Lynn learned some Dai Fei Family information. Actually, Meng Zhuo'er is the illegitimate child of the former head of Dai Fei Family, Winslow Dai Fei. This matter had become the forbidden to talk about scandal in the Dai Fei Family. Meng Zhuo'er, at ten years old, his mother, the beautiful Korean woman, died. After attending the funeral, Winslow Dai Fei went against the pressure of Dai Fei Family and brought the young Meng Zhuo'er to Switzerland.

This matter naturally stirred controversy as Rolando, Adams, and Murphy three brother's mother, the legitimate wife of Winslow Dai Fei, seeing this not yet able to wipe the mouth man almost as a food thief and divorced her husband.

But, in any case, Meng Zhuo'er still came, his Korean name was changed to the present name, and he became a member of Dai Fei Family.

It can be said that Meng Zhuo'er eventually became the person who Dai Fei Family depend the most on his excellent ability to work, of course, he has a great deal of help from his father.

His outstanding ability to work, to a large extent, related to his family background.

Imagine being a bastard of a noble family, this title is a disgrace

to anyone. Moreover, the very distinct Mixed-race appearance of Meng Zhuo'er, in this traditional Swiss family, was particularly dazzling. Therefore, such a child, being subjected to other people's discrimination and bullying, was to be expected.

People who grew up in this environment, usually, there are only two results, one is to fall into depression and become the real black sheep of the family; Second, to go all out to get ahead. Fortunately, Meng Zhuo'er chose the later.

Adams Dai Fei, who at this time entered the Hall, is the same as his brother Rolando Dai Fei, a very typical Italian Swiss. Moreover, his handsome look was much better than his big brother.

"So you also came, big brother. Haven't seen you for ages." Adams smiled happily, showing his perfect white teeth.

"What are you doing here?" Rolando frowned.

"What's wrong, doesn't big brother welcome me?" Adams still smilingly said.

"Didn't you go to Finland? Why do you back so soon?"

"This morning I just got off the plane. Hearing something just happened here, I've decided to come and see."

Rolando looked at him and did not speak again.

Adams shrugged, bypassed his side and walked over to Alice Lynn.

“Long time no see, Alice Lynn, you’re more beautiful than ever. Have dinner with me this evening? I know a good steak restaurant.” Adams looked at her face.

“You’re very considerate, Mr. Adam. I’m very sorry, I’m recently a little busy, so I can’t accept your invitation.” Although Alice Lynn hated him to the bone, she still maintained the basic courtesy.

“That’s too bad, do you remember your fiancé Nicole? He said he missed you. If you can come tonight, then he must also be present.” Adams said with a smile.

Alice Lynn unconsciously clenched her fists again, after a while, she choked back her anger and said: “Mr. Adams, I broke the engagement with Nicole a long time ago, so now he doesn’t have any relationship with me. Please do not misunderstand.”

“Oh, that’s so much better, tonight it would be just the two of us having dinner together. I will let you have a very romantic night.” Adams went on.

“I just said, I’m recently busy, so, I’m sorry but I can’t accept your invitation.” Alice Lynn said, deadpanned.

“Don’t worry, you slowly think it over. If you figured it out, give me a call. I will wait for you.” Adams sincerely persuaded with deep emotion.

Toward this cheeky man, this mixed beauty has no way at all. Except to shut up and ignored him.

Masashi smiled, although this player is not a good man, he is an interesting guy. Dealing with such people, at least, he would not be bored.

Like a government official extending condolences to the disaster victims, Adams looked at Masashi and Amy, who still hid behind him, and then turned around and asked the mixed beauty: “Alice Lynn, can you help me introduce with this young gentleman?”

Alice Lynn sighed, and then forced her spirit and said to him: “This is my friend, his name is Lei Yin. Lei Yin, this is the little brother of Mr. Meng Zhuo’er, Mr. Adams.”

Deeply looking at Masashi, Adams, as if being careless, asked: “Mr. Lei Yin is a foreigner?”

“Yes, I’m a Japanese Chinese. Listened to Alice Lynn, Swiss has beautiful scenery, so I came to see.” Masashi said with a smile.

“So, this means Mr. Lei Yin is a tourist?”

“Yes.”

“Switzerland’s scenery is very good, if Mr. Lei Yin is interested, I can accompany you to go sightseeing around here. But I don’t know if you would accept this offer?” Adams, in contrast to the playboy image just a moment ago, looked at him with a meaningful look.

Hearing his words, Alice Lynn immediately showed a slightly nervous look at Masashi, while Rolando, who stood next to them frowned.

“Sorry, I like to travel alone. If some important person wants to accompany, I might as well find a tour group. Being guided by the tour guide beauty would be even more exciting.” Masashi nonchalantly said. In any case, he didn’t need to pretend any cordiality, so he didn’t bother to say kind words.

Hearing the answer from Masashi, Alice Lynn unconsciously let out a sigh.

“That’s a shame, I thought I could make friends with Mr. Lei Yin. But I would like to give you a piece of advice, don’t do anything beyond touristy thing. Otherwise, you may encounter some trouble. After all, this is Switzerland, not Nepal.” Adams didn’t want to play word games, the meaning of his words is more and more obvious.

“If you see cockroaches on the travel, then you step it on with your two feet; seeing a piece of shit on the ground, you throw it into the trash can. Do these count as beyond the boundary of a



tourist, Mr. Adams?” Masashi said with a smile.

“Mr. Lei Yin is really a warm-hearted man.” Adams glanced at him once again and smiled, then resumed his playboy persona.

But from his eyes, Masashi knew that he had a murderous intention toward himself.

He suddenly discovered the little girl who hid behind him had shivered in fright looking at Adams, who already went over to Alice Lynn.

To him, who had more and more understanding of Amy, he naturally knew what happened. He quietly reached into his back and held her little hand. Before long, Amy’s shivering stopped.

It seems the show is about to start; Masashi showed a faint smile expression.

# Chapter 72 - Funeral

---

If you say that a person's level of material aspect is the number of assets he owns, then the value of a person's spiritual value depends on the number of people in the funeral who are truly in tears, not the number of personnel that attended the funeral. Because going to the funeral may not necessarily be for mourning, for example, a creditor may have attended a funeral of the debtor as they're concerned they won't get their money back, afterward seeing the remains of the dead, they would say a few words of curse.

According to this argument, it was clear that Meng Zhuo'er was obviously a controversial man.

The Dai Fei family stood in the front row while those who stood at the back were either Meng Zhuo'er's friend or business partner.

With respect to the majority of Dai Fei family members, wearing an expressionless face, standing in the back, were the so-called outsiders, their expression also appeared to be a bit in sorrow, at least Masashi saw that several men had been wiping their tears unceasingly.

As the deceased only daughter, Amy naturally must sit with Rolando and the three younger brothers as well as several so-called family elder at the front.

But no one knew why this ignorant little girl wasn't willing to leave the Asian youth claiming to be a tourist, with that Rolando finally had no choice but to call Alice to sit together with her at the

front. Luckily, Alice was also another person close to Amy, and this settled the issue without a problem.

Although the beautiful mixed-race woman was Meng Zhuo'er's lifetime most trusted subordinate, or can be said to be his close friend, but, after all, she was a young girl with a beautiful appearance, causing a lot of people to have vulgar thoughts. A wifeless man on a date with a relatively beautiful woman, such old topics made these people have similar thoughts in mind.

The funeral was held in a peaceful, beautiful Joyce cemetery. The Dai Fei family was a Christian family, funerals in accordance with the Christian funeral ceremony, and are conducted under the auspices of the priest.

People's death were similar to that of an extinguished lamp, no matter how great or humble he was before his death, to this day, the results were all the same.

Regarding life and death, Masashi didn't feel a thing. Death was significant for most people, but for him, they had no meaning at all. If you insist on making an analogy, he was just a man that enjoyed the process of fishing but didn't care about the outcome.

Reborn in this body, he originally intended to be an ordinary person, living an ordinary life. But slowly, he found himself completely unable to.

Perhaps it was related to his restless personality, ever since his reincarnation, he had done too many things that ordinary people

wouldn't do.

So in the end, he gave up. It doesn't matter whether what he was doing was extraordinary, just doing the things you want to do is enough. He had this qualification, and also had the ability to. Therefore, although they weren't acquainted he still actually completely trusted and relied on this little girl, and from afar even went to Switzerland to help her with her matter.

At the funeral, Masashi finally saw Meng Zhuoer's last brother, Murphy-Dai Fei.

Relative to Adams high spirits, Murphy appeared to be low-key. While his appearance wasn't inferior with Adams', but he felt like a quiet university teacher, and wasn't able to see how this person was a multinational corporation manager.

The so-called manager of the Concordia group were completely two individual concepts.

Concordia Group had a total of only three managers. Namely, Rolando, Murphy and another family member named Ou Dike. As for Adams, he wasn't branded with this title, but even so, he still had a considerable amount of influence in the family.

The three managers each have different proportions of the Concordia group shares, strictly speaking, they're also one of the bosses, but the Dai Fei family tradition states that there could only be one president, and the president's position, of course, fell in the hands of the master of the house. However, if the current master

of the house cannot lead the family to develop, or cause the family industry to have substantial losses, the family members have the right to abolish the duty of his presidency and master of the house duties. After all, although the master of the house has the largest ownership stake in the family, as long as more than two-third members of the family unite, it's sufficient to achieve full control over the number of shares.

The Concordia Group is a multinational corporation, but was actually completely a family business, and isn't like other listed multinational companies. All shares in the family business are concentrated in the hands of family members. Proud Dai Fei family members, whether an enterprise could be developed, lies in the leader's correct instruction and the cooperation of all involved in, rather than how much money to raise in the stock market.

Each member of a family, including the master of the house, before inheriting shares, must sign a contract. The contract's content had basically not changed for decades. The effect was that the shares may not be transferred to anyone other than a Dai Fei family member. If you do not agree to sign this contract, according to the contract that the decedent had signed in the past, the heir will lose eligibility of the inheritance, and the share will be distributed equally to each family member.

Dai Fei family practice may be very strange in the eyes of many. But it is precisely because of this contract, that effectively maintained the integrity of the Dai Fei family-owned industry, and the idea is not entirely without a reason.

Two hours later, the funeral was over. With the ceremony over

the crowd gradually dispersed, and slowly became a quiet cemetery.

Amy, Alice with Masashi, the three were invited by Rolando as house guests. Accompanied also by the two brothers Murphy and Adams, as well as several other children of the family.

The car didn't take long, Amy suddenly fell in Masashi's arms, face, hands clasped at his waist. After a while, Masashi felt his chest gradually began to moist.

"If you want to cry, you cry." Masashi sighed and gently stroked her hair.

Not long after he spoke, the little girl 'woo' cries resounded under his arms; her body slowly began to twitch.

Amy though having autism, still had an IQ no different than that of the children of her age.

And she knew that from now on, she will never see her father again, and although she had only spent very little time with him, she was still quietly concerned about her father.

Alice sitting next to them watched silently, not saying a word for a long time.

An hour later, four deluxe cars arrived at an old urban area at the coast of Lima, stopping in front of a six-storey mansion.

Alice whispered to Masashi and explained, this mansion was Meng Zhuoer-Dai Fei's former residence, which now belongs to Rolando.

When all the people got off, like a ghost, Adams went to Alice. And at his side was followed by a man and a woman.

"Alice, long time no see." Adams smiled like a prince.

"Mr. Adams, if I remember correctly, we met the day before yesterday." Alice said coldly.

"So we haven't seen for two days, no wonder I miss you. Alice, are you free tonight and care to accompany me to dinner?"

"I'm sorry, Mr. Adams, I have recently been really busy."

"Dima, you see, I was rejected. Was it because of the way I invited her?" Adams said to the young man next to him.

The man smiled and said: "Perhaps Miss Alice is really very busy."

At this time, another blonde standing next to him provocatively looked at Alice, then turned to Adams and said: "Adams, did you forget that we have a date tonight?"

“How will I forget, honey. I just think that having a little more people would make it more lively.” Adams seemed to look at Alice and explained.

“Alice, Mr. Rolando has gone in, let’s go quickly.” Masashi, being treated as a transparent person, suddenly said something.

“Okay.” Alice looked at him with gratitude.

“I must say goodbye now, gentlemen and woman.” The mixed-race beauty left after the three nodded, walking together with Masashi and Amy.

“Adams, who is that boy? Is he also a member of your family?” The golden haired beautiful woman a little strangely asked.

“He’s just a nosy tourist.” Looking at Masashi’s back, Adams sneered and said.

Seeing Adams’ face, the man named Dima showed interested eyes.



# Chapter 73 - Afternoon Tea

---

After eating a hearty lunch, each member of the family was drinking an afternoon tea while having a vast conversation.

Masashi lacked interest in this sort of boring family meeting, and if he were to choose, he would rather take an afternoon nap.

Amy sat down next to him refreshingly watching TV. It seems like after the kid had cried, her mood had become a lot better.

Rolando along with Alice and two other young men were having a conversation, perhaps it's a common characteristic as a businessman, as the chat naturally changed to business.

On the other hand, that young man named Dima seemed very interested in Masashi. Talking casually, and asking him insignificant matters. Masashi was already a sophisticated man, so it was natural that his answers were diligent.

While they were having a conversation, sitting on the other side of Adams were seven or eight young men, who suddenly stood up and walked out.

“Brother, Adams said that he wanted to play billiards, I wonder if you're interested?” The gentle Murphy came and said to Rolando.

“Billiards? I haven't played for a long time, do you guys want to see?” Rolando stood up a little interested.

Several young people didn't say anything and just followed to stand.

"Lei Yin, you can go," Alice said to him.

Masashi nodded, and also followed to stand.

Seeing Masashi go out, Amy ran over and pulled his clothes.

"Kid, have you seen people play billiards?" Masashi asked while walking.

The little girl didn't say anything, and just stared at him.

Masashi smiled, pinching her little face then continued to walk.

Arriving at the east side of the mansion, he saw that in a huge room were two big tables, hanging on the wall near the table was a flying target. In the innermost corner was a bar full of bottles.

The furniture in the room was like a typical high-class bar.

Masashi suspected that this should be the ornaments that Rolando and his brother's father Winslow-Dai Fei left behind, as Rolando was too serious, so he shouldn't have this kind of leisurely place.

Just like the nobles of the British society, the game to play was billiard. However, very few people of the Swiss upper class choose American billiards, and instead the general choice was snooker.

There the dozen people were divided into two groups, each occupying a table.

In upper circles of society, nothing is accidental. Even such a simple grouping, one can clearly see the difference.

Rolando the three brothers, Dima and two other young people that were standing in front at the funeral, were naturally grouped together. Needless to say, these people were all a family member, regardless of status were wealthy prominent members.

At the other table, were young people that were far inferior in these aspects.

Because of being the former master of the house Meng Zhuoer's former confidant and right-hand man, Alice was also assigned to Rolando's group.

But seeing that Adams was a skilled player. Not long after starting had connected several balls ahead of Murphy and Dima approximately 50 degrees. Seeing her guy play so well, the blonde continuously applauded.

“What fun is this kind of dry game, why don't we bet?” When it

was Murphy's turn to bat, Adams at the side said.

"How much do you want?" Dima asked, smiling.

"How about 100 Swiss Francs?" Adams after gracefully having a sip of red wine said.

"I don't oppose," Dima said with a shrug.

"Murphy, how about you?" Adams looked at his brother.

"No problem." The quiet young man nodded.

Rolando, for such a thing, didn't say anything.

After about half an hour, after two games, the winner was Adams. Quite an exciting game attracted a lot of people to come and watch.

Receiving two checks from both Dima and Murphy, he was very proud of himself, then hugged and kissed the blonde beauty.

"Another game," Adams said with a smile

"I want to take a break. Who want to play?" Dima asked several other youths.

Seeing that nobody wanted to play, made Adams more proud, and glanced around, locking his eyes on the Asian-boy leisurely drinking wine.

“Mr. Lei Yin, do you have any interest to play the next round?” Adams walked two steps away from the youth and asked.

“I’m not very good,” Masashi said, laughing lightly.

“Don’t mind, I’ll be lenient.” Adam’s words caused the blonde beauty to chuckle.

Masashi smiled, putting his glass down, “Well, please be lenient.”

When Masashi selected a club, Adams said to him: “Mr. Lei Yin, let’s bet to stimulate the game.”

“Also good, how much do you want?” Masashi turned to look at him.

“What about a thousand Swiss francs?” Adams said.

“Adams, the stakes are too high.” Hearing him, Rolando frowned.

“Brother, this is me and Mr. Lei Yin’s game, he hasn’t said anything yet, how do you know he wouldn’t agree?” Adams said cheerfully.

A flash of anger appeared on Rolando's eyes, he turned to Masashi and said: "Mr. Lei Yin, you are a guest, you don't have to bet."

"Actually, 1000 Swiss francs is nothing, right? I don't have any issue with it, I accept." Contrary to the two brother's expectations, Masashi actually agreed.

"Let's go ahead, Mr. Lei Yin." Relative to Rolando's dissatisfaction, Adams revealed a proud look on his face.

After Masashi had selected a club, he nodded.

"Mr. Lei Yin is a guest, please go first." Adams made a gesture to invite him.

"Then I'll be blunt." Masashi went to the front table, then bent over in an extremely unprofessional position aimed at the cue ball.

Seeing him like this, many people couldn't help but laugh, but endured not to laugh.

Alice felt very puzzled, watching Masashi's position, it was clear the he was not a professional, so why would he promise to bet?

"Pow!" A light sound, Masashi hit the ball out. Although he used a considerable amount of strength, the ball entered a bag.

Masashi gave a strange little look at the club and then looked at the balls on the table, revealing a little bit confused look.

“It seems Mr. Lei Yin doesn’t have luck,” Adams said with a smile.

“I think so too because this game usually starts with hitting the first ball.” Murphy on behalf of Masashi said.

The onlooker knew that he needed to hit the first ball, but the ball was clearly too intense, as even the youth’s batting posture was a bit funny.

Adams walked passed him to the table’s edge and then having very different posture than that of Masashi, very elegantly aimed at a ball.

Hitting three balls, Adams successfully scored three balls in a pocket. He somewhat proudly looked at Masashi, only to find out that he didn’t even look at his play, and was absorbed in looking at the club.

Freak! Adams swore in his heart, then bent down to continue his play.

The fifth ball, Adams played a little bit too hard, resulting in the ball missing the pocket. But for this result, he had no dissatisfaction, after all, the opponent was not a professional,

giving him two or three opportunities doesn't matter.

“Mr. Lei Yin, you hit.” Murphy kindly reminded Masashi, who was carefully looking at his club.

“I know, thank you.” Masashi stood up, walked up to the side of the table.

With that kind of ugly posture, the people around couldn't help but laugh, the Asian-teenager aiming at a red ball, didn't hit for a long time.

Just when Adams was about to mock him, a “pow” sound resounded, the teenager finally hit.

As the white cue ball rolled slowly, everyone thought the ball would stop because of the lack of strength, but it still continued, and the ball was slowly rolling towards the red ball.

“PA” a gentle percussive sound, the red ball was hit by the cue ball, then rolled to the bag, going into the pocket.

Everyone invariably swore in their heart, “shit,” Adams had an indifferent look.

Next, the teenager went to the other side of the table, bending, aiming, hitting, after completing these three movements, he unexpectedly hit another ball.



The people around sighed and thought that this fellow's luck was indeed good.

But when the third red ball was struck into the pocket, Adams showed a vigilant look.

Then, the fourth and the fifth, went into the pocket, while the ball was driven next to the sixth ball, no one dared to laugh. Everyone couldn't believe it, looking at the teenager continually using an ugly posture to hit the ball on the table into the pocket.

When he hit the fourth ball, the youth had to look around before shooting, and then each shot would put a ball into the packet. Afterward, besides Adams, everyone was looking joyfully at the youth's individual performances. There were even a few that seemed almost impossible to get to play the ball, and it was like a teenager performing magic and easily putting it into the pocket.

For a time, the room was constantly ringing, and everyone couldn't help but give a warm applause.

"Mr. Lei Yin, this is your bet." After the game, Adams handed a cheque to Masashi.

"I haven't played in a while, and I feel a bit rusty. That's why at the start I said I don't play well." Masashi said as he put the check in his pocket. Masashi was not deceiving him; he hasn't played this game for nearly three decades.

“Mr. Lei Yin is implicitly kind. I didn’t imagine you were an expert billiard player.” Adams said in a strange tone.

“I’m not a master, but just slightly stronger than some professional. If there’s nothing else, then excuse me.” Then, Masashi turned around and left the room.

Adams looked very viciously at Masashi’s back, tightly squeezing his hands into fists until it turned white.

## Chapter 74 - Chase

---

Although she didn't know what the two talked about in the room, seeing Adams's complexion, Alice couldn't help but walk to Masashi and ask what he had said to Adams. Masashi told her the original words, which made the mixed-race beauty to suddenly stare at him.

"You don't know Adams's nature; he would definitely not let you off." If it weren't for the fact that there was someone there, she might have already come out and shout.

"What's the difference? Ever since I intervened in the matter, it was already doomed that he and I would be in opposition.

Alice also thought that it was true.

"Just forgot to ask you, is Rolando a widower? Otherwise, why can't I see his wife and children." Masashi reminded her of a problem.

Alice laughed, "his wife is with his daughter, she has a matter to attend to so she went to Canada, and should be back in a few days."

"His wife is Canadian?"

"Yes," Alice said.

"Don't tell this to anyone, when can we go back to Meng Zhuo'er's home, I have nothing to talk about with these people."

“Leaving now, is not good, at least until after dinner. Bear with me a little bit.” Alice whispered a bit of advice.

Masashi helplessly nodded.

Finally at 9:00, it was finally over. Masashi holding a fast asleep Amy sat at the back of the car.

“Lei Yin, during these days, if you’re fine with it, don’t go out casually,” Alice says while driving.

“Because of what Adams can do?” In the back seat, Masashi yawned.

“Yes. Do you know why Adams’s reputation in the family is so bad?”

“talk and I’ll listen.”

“It’s because he was the first in the Dai Fei family that involved in the arms business. Although there are some gray incomes done by the Dai Fei family, the real selling of arms, and drugs was never done while Adams was the first person to make an exception. In fact, he had done it very secretly, only until two years ago after the family elders discovered it by accident. To this end, his father, Mr. Winslow was furious, he had threatened to keep him out of the parent-child relationship, and later for his mother’s sake let it go. But after Winslow died, he was the person of the four brothers

who obtained the least inheritance. Therefore, he had hated Mr. Meng Zhuoer for obtaining the most inheritance, this in the family is an open secret. But even so, he still has considerable influence in Swiss Reactionary gang. Therefore, I fear that he will start with you.”

After Alice finished, after a while she still didn't hear Masashi's voice, and couldn't help but turn around and look at him.

Seeing that he didn't even hear her speak, his eyes firmly looking out the window.

Seeing this, Alice had no choice but to sigh.

A few minutes later, she suddenly heard a voice from the back; Masashi spoke: “Alice, maybe you're a little late.”

“What do you mean?” The mixed-race beauty asked a bit puzzled.

“You immediately inform these fellows to get ready, there might be someone tasked to attack us.” ‘These fellows’ that Masashi referred to were the plain clothed policeman in the car behind them.

Since the sniper incident, The Swiss police force had sent some police in plain clothes taking turns to monitor and protect them 24 hours a day, Every time they got out there would be a police that follows them.

“Exactly what happened?” She had used her rear view mirror to look at the back but hadn’t discovered anything. However, she still took out her cell phone prepared to dial.

“Well, first don’t inform them. Do you have a gun?” Thinking, Masashi suddenly changed his mind, putting a coat over Amy’s body, then put her in the car seat.

“How can I have that stuff?” Hearing his words, Alice put down her phone.

Masashi climbed back after pulling his chair in front of the front seat, told her: “I’ll drive, you hold Amy and wait. If I tell to get on the ground, no matter what happens don’t look up.” With that, he held the steering wheel, letting Alice free herself from her seatbelt.

Based on her trust on this teenager, Alice didn’t say anything, quickly unbuckled her belt and climbed back. When she climbed back into the back seat, she couldn’t help but ask: “Lei Yin, exactly what’s happening?”

“Two cars has been behind us from the beginning. It’s clear that we’re being followed.” Masashi drove, and along the side said.

“Sent by Adams?” Alice looked behind the glass.

“Most likely. If it’s simply tracking down then, it’s nothing, but just now their speed suddenly increased a lot. Looking at their position it’s possible that they were sent to put their hands on us,

but I'm not sure, but it's still better to be careful." Masashi said while tightly staring at the rearview mirror.

It seems that he wasn't the only one that found out that there was a problem. Masashi saw the plain clothed policeman in the car behind them pulled out a pistol and looking out the window as the two cars got closer to them.

They should have no problem, Masashi increased the speed, suddenly leaving behind the three cars.

Along the way, there were no traffic lights, after turning at a corner, he thought that the car chase had ended, but that discomfort came across his mind again.

It's too easy.

But soon, he suddenly saw from the front a white Citroen quickly approaching, and he knew this game wasn't over.

Masashi clearly saw next to the driver's seat, a man wearing sunglasses was holding a pistol toward them.

Without time to think Masashi shouted: "Get Down Fast!" Then he lowered his head himself.

"Bang, Bang, Bang!" Three shots in a row, the glass shattered on the front driver's seat. Some fragments of the glass hit Masashi's neck.

But even so, Masashi didn't dare to carelessly move, and he was always steering the wheel tightly, making the vehicle maintain going as straight as possible. At the same time, he stepped on the brake with his foot fiercely. Must know that his head was lowered, so he can't see the front road. If not careful, he might collide with other cars.

After a harsh braking sound, the car finally stopped.

Masashi quickly looked up and saw the Citroen car came to a stop in the back. No time to think at the moment, and immediately started the car again to get ahead.

Because the direction was different, if the opposite party pursues again, it would first need to reverse before they could follow. Sure enough, the car sopped and didn't pursue again, instead sped away to in the opposite direction.

"Well, it should be fine now," Masashi said to Alice.

"Those people are gone?" Alice looked up at the back.

"Gone. Exciting, right? Even such scenes in Hollywood would become mediocre." Masashi said.

"You're in the mood to tell jokes. We just almost died there." Alice said with fear.



“I’m also a little careless, didn’t imagine that two just was just to distract the police. It seems our opponent is a lot smarter than imagined.” Masashi looked at the empty window and said.

“What do we do now? Go to the police?”

“Going to the police station is the same, going back to this little kid’s place is good, there’s also a lot of police there anyway.”

Alice naturally didn’t have any opinion; she was still frightened.

“How’s the kid?” Masashi turned his head to look.

“She’s still sleeping. Strange, such a huge sound didn’t even wake her up.” Alice looked at Amy quietly sleeping.

Masashi smiled and said nothing.

Waking up would be strange. For fear that the kid would be frightened yet again, he had previously very lightly approached several of her acupuncture points, and wouldn’t wake up at least not until tomorrow morning.

In five days is the reading of the will, at the appointed time what would happen?

His grandmother, had recently always beaten to this state these days, those guys believe that I, your father is easily bullied.

Thinking of this, Masashi's fire was lit, and then unconsciously, the car suddenly accelerated.

Alice was startled by this sudden acceleration, long light brown hair was right in front of the window with no glasses, coming in a flurry as it was being blown by the wind

Vaguely, she seemed to see the youth laughing.

# Chapter 75 - Change

---

“Alice, you see....Lei yet?” At 8 in the morning, Amy went to the hall dressed in her cartoon pajamas. Her right hand was rubbing her eyes as she asked Alice, who was sitting on the couch reading the newspaper.

“Amy, you woke up so early? Quick come and eat breakfast.” Alice said softly.

Amy nodded, went to the table and sat down on a chair.

Drinking milk, Amy turned to Alice said: “Alice, Lei...where?”

“He’s out. Wait for a while and he should come back soon.” Alice explained.

Hearing her answer, Amy no longer spoke, just quietly eating her bread.

Being with her for a long time, it was natural for the mixed-race beauty to know that she was unhappy. In her heart, she couldn’t help but curse a bit at that presumptuous guy.

At the highway where the shootings took place in the afternoon, the teenager after answering the phone suddenly said that he would go out for a walk.

“Is your brain broken? As soon as you go out, you may soon be killed by Adams’s man.” After being shocked with what he said, Alice stood up and shouted.

“But I’m a tourist, where can you find tourists staying at home all day long? I’m going to the alpine ski resort and go boating at the Lake Zurich. And again, I’m a tourist!” Masashi roused himself up with his arm to shout loudly.

The nearby Amy looked at him curiously but learning his patterns she raised her two small hands and came to him as she struggles to stop him.

“Come on, which part of you resembles a tourist?” the Mixed-race beauty snappily gave him a look.

“So, I’ll prove to you, that I’ll be a good tourist.” Masashi smiled and said.

“Do you honestly tell me, that you want to go out?” Alice looked at him seriously.

“Of course, that’s what tourists do.” Masashi lazily said.

Then he knelt down next to Amy said: “Kid, I’m going out now. Stop, don’t show such a happy look, I’m not taking you with me. But I’ll come back, probably at night. And I want this little darling to be obedient until I come back.”

Amy listening to this immediately became worried and went closer to him pulling his clothes with no intention of letting go.

“Hey kid, you behave, or I might spank you.”

The little girl pitifully looked at him. But her hands still had no intention of letting go of him.

Masashi couldn't do anything, and without any other option turned towards the still angry mixed-race beautiful lady, giving her a meaningful glance to help break it up.

Alice glared at him but still came to help soothe Amy.

She didn't know why this guy wanted to go, but one thing she knew, was that this youth would never do anything stupid, he must have a reason to go out. This guy just didn't want to say anything, as it would be very annoying.

After the two did a lot of explaining, the little girl finally let go of her hands, but her face also revealed a feeling of sadness.

Masashi stood up, as usual, and gently pinched her cheek, then motioned to Alice as he walked out of the door.

Alice sighed, and with her previous agreement with him, she took out her mobile phone to inform the dispatched undercover officers not to follow him.

At 10 pm, Masashi really kept his promise and came back. But the next morning, he went out again. For the next three days, he would leave early in the morning, and then come back late in the evening, treating this place like a hotel.

In the several days that he went out, Rolando and Murphy would also come here to visit Amy. And they also thought that the matter of Lei going out was very strange.

Moreover, because of the recent road shooting incident that was more serious than the sniper incident, the Swiss police was startled and furious. They immediately added more manpower, to track and seize the murderer as soon as possible. If possible, the high levels of the Swiss Police hope to finish and simply work in the police station, as that at least didn't give them a headache.

The day after tomorrow was the day of the reading of the will, would something also happen at the appointed time? Alice anxiously looked at Amy, who was eating breakfast.

“Not eating? Just eat a little bit.” Alice, seeing that Amy stopped eating after only eating a piece of bread, walked towards the table to persuade her.

The little girl shook her head, but still drank all of the remaining milk in her cup and stood up.

Alice didn't want to force, so she instead helped her pack up the dishes.

Coming out from the kitchen, she noticed that Amy was hugging a rag bear doll peacefully watching TV.

Amy, who doesn't like to talk and make contact with people, usually only watch TV to pass her time. But ever since that boy came, the favorite thing that wanted to do changed and instead wanted to hang out with him.

Now that she thought about it, since the death of Mr. Meng Zhuoer, Amy had not attended to any classes. Perhaps it was because of there was too much going on recently.

Thinking of this, Alice walked over and said to her: "Amy, we haven't had classes recently, do you want to have a class right now?"

The little girl nodded, obediently put down the doll in her hands.

Because of Amy's autism, she simply couldn't go to school like a normal child. During Meng Zhuo'er's lifetime he had requested a few family teachers to come and give her lessons, but because of Amy's resistance, there was finally no way for it to continue. Alice seeing this, took the initiative to propose to Meng Zhuoer that as long as there's time, she would go and have a class with Amy.

Regarding this proposal, Meng Zhuoer felt very grateful. Thus, Alice for the entire three years taught Amy.

The class was not too long, in order to allow Amy to gradually get used to it, making it only a two-hour lesson, at that time Alice had finished class ahead of time.

“Amy, are you not feeling well?” Seeing that the little girl didn’t have any spirit, Alice sat at her side and asked.

Amy shook her head.

“Is Amy thinking of Brother Lei Yin?”

Amy looked at her and nodded.

“Can you tell me why you like Brother Lei Yin so much?” Alice had been very puzzled why Amy, who had never allowed a stranger to approach to her, became so attached with the teenager who she had never met before.

Amy thought for a moment, her face seemed a bit distressed and said: “I...No, I have no idea. All in all,...is, is like him.”

Hearing her answer, Alice smiled, and didn’t say anything.

—

“Today the weather isn’t very good, just like my mood.



That fellow hasn't come back. It's been nearly two weeks, where did he actually go?

Is he still mad at me? Hateful, the person who should be angry is me right. Not informing anyone where he goes, causing me to everyday wait for him to appear at the school gate.

Today, I met his sister, who wore a very old fashioned black-rimmed glasses. I didn't know that there was still people wearing that type of eyeglasses, it was ugly. It seems like it's not only that fellow that's an odd person, even his sister's odd. However, that female student beside her was actually very attractive. I heard that that girl was a relative of their family, and is now living in his family's home. So there's not a day that goes by that those two meet?

Maybe it's just my imagination, but it seems like his sister seems to hate me. I asked her for a long time but still didn't say a word.

But the most pathetic thing is, that I always unconsciously think of that nasty guy.

Ryoko and Asami said that I've changed, which I know. Since that day, as long as I'm with him, I thought that I wasn't myself anymore.

Other male students would unceasingly try to find a way to make me happy. I received a gift from the student association's vice-president, which only made me unhappy.

Hateful fellow!”

Aiko gently closed her diary, then yearningly looked outside the window.

# Chapter 76 - Will

---

Saturday, it was an ordinary Saturday for people, but for members of the Dai Fei family, it was an unusual weekend.

It was because today was the reading of the late head of the family Lord Meng Zhuoer-Dai Fei's will before his death.

Meng Zhuoer was the master of the Concordia group as he had nearly 40% of its shares, where these shares are going, would determine the fate of some people.

Because Masashi wasn't a Dai Fei family member, therefore he was waiting outside the room on his own initiative.

After half an hour, the gate of the room opened, the expression of dozens of Dai Fei family members vary one after another. Behind them was the family's exclusive law office dedicated lawyers.

"I told you that that woman's relationship with Meng Zhuoer is definitely not common. Now you see."

"Keep it down, do you want everyone to hear you?"

"Meng Zhuo'er really doesn't know how to think, allowing an outsider to unexpectedly participate in the family's business."

Although most people had an unemotional expression, some

people just couldn't bear but to complain.

In the middle of the crowd, Masashi saw Amy pulling Alice, as well as Rolando the three brothers, and Rolando's wife.

Seeing Masashi, Alice turned her head and excused herself, pulling Amy as she walked towards Masashi.

"Let's go back."

Masashi nods.

Seeing Alice poor spirit, Masashi propose that he drive. In this regard, the mixed-race beauty had no complaints.

"Why don't you ask me, what's written on Mr. Meng Zhuo'er's will?" After returning to the house, Alice suddenly said something to Masashi.

"When you want to say, you will naturally say. If you don't want to say, it would only be annoying to ask." Masashi said while conveniently turning on the TV to distract Amy.

"Why do you sometimes resemble a professional and a no good ordinary man? I was really not in the mood to tell you, but now I've changed my mind."

"Although I didn't hear the contents of the will, but seeing those

people's reactions, I could guess a little bit of it. Do you want a glass?" Masashi held up a bottle of red wine and asked Alice.

Alice nodded.

"Mr. Meng Zhuo'er has left most of his stuff, including his shares to Amy. But because Amy hasn't grown up, he, therefore, wrote it plainly in the will, only after Amy becomes 18 years old could she then inherit the shares. During this period, I will manage her property as the guardian of Amy." After having drunk several glass of wine, Alice was feeling a little bit better.

"Mr. Meng Zhuo'er also specified that if Amy accidentally dies, all property except the Concordia Groups shares, would all be donated to charity while those shares will be divided equally between family members."

"Meng Zhuo'er had done this to prevent people such as Adams to put their hands on Amy, which is understandable. What are you going to do now?" Masashi looked at her.

"I don't want to change anything. It would be best if the Concordia group be managed by Mr. Rolando and Mr. Murphy. After all, they're part of the Dai Fei family, and I'm just an outsider."

"I agree with you; with the current events, it would be best to maintain its original condition. Logically speaking, Amy should now be in no danger. Because even if she were to be in an accident, besides that little stock that would be divided equally among

family members, these people can't obtain anything else from her.

“Who do you think sent the people who wanted to kill us?”

“I don't know, but one thing I know now is why Adams sent people to seize you during your stay in Nepal.”

“What?” Alice looked at him in surprise as she puts down her glass of wine.

“In fact, it's very simple, I don't know through what channel but Adams obviously in advance knew the contents of the will, that is to say, he knew that you would become Amy's guardian, her properties would be legally managed by you. Therefore, his goal was to capture you. He wanted you to transfer the custody to him. Remember, from a legal standpoint he is Amy's uncle, making him more qualified than you to become Amy's guardian. And Meng Zhuo'er's will didn't specify whether or not the custody can be transferred and as long as you're willing to transfer the custody to him, he'll legally have the right to manage Amy's properties.”

“But these are Amy's properties, even if he gets custody, he'll only temporarily have the right to manage it, what use would that be for him? Moreover, it's impossible for him to tie me up and go to the attorney to legally transfer the custody.” Alice didn't understand.

“Have you ever wondered, that Amy's now nine years old, which means that he'll also have nine years to really manage these assets. In those nine years, if you let people like Adams have 40% of the

Concordia group's shares, God knows what he would do with the group. Although if other people in the family were to group together they'd be able to suppress him with their combined shares quantity, don't forget that guy would kill and burn anyone, and won't be lenient just to produce the result he wants. Amy can only inherit the shares when she's at age, but the Concordia group may possibly be only empty shells when he's done with it.

As to how he'll make you sign the transfer of custody, in my opinion, it just a matter of application. As far as I know, there are at least five or more ways to make you submit."

Alice thought of what Adams had done in the past, so it was indeed likely.

"But what if Adams come to trouble us again?"

"There's always a way," Masashi said flatly and drank the glass of wine in his hand in one gulp.

In two in the morning, sitting cross-legged on the bed Masashi suddenly opened his eyes.

He first looked at the wall clock, then jumped out of bed, putting on a jacket as he left the room.

In the hall, he saw Alice holding her knees curled up like a ball. On the table in front of her was an opened bottle that was clearly brandy.

Masashi silently watched her, and after a while, he picked up a box of tissues from the other table and went over.

Seeing the paper towels in front of her, Alice was stunned for a moment, then turned around and looked at Masashi.

“Is one not enough?” Masashi took the box again and pulled out another one.

“Thank you.” Alice took the paper towel to wipe away her tears.

“What happened?”

“Nothing, I just suddenly remembered Mr. Meng Zhuo’er, so I couldn’t hold it in.” Alice was silent for a moment and said.

Masashi looked into her eyes and said dismissively: “Don’t take the dead to make excuses, this is the most basic respect.”

Alice startled, looked up at Masashi.

“Well, in the end, what happened, maybe there’s something I can do to help.” Masashi looked at her.

Alice lowered her head, as if for a long time, until she suddenly looked up at the boy, “Adams kidnapped my son.”



Hearing these words made the teenager seem a little surprised, “You have a son?”

Alice slightly nodded.

“I was 18 years old at the time when met a man. Not long after, we lived together. At that time, I was a student and didn’t understand anything. I thought he would really love me for life. But three months later, he left without saying anything. I didn’t have a chance to tell him I was pregnant.

He was gone, and I was a fool to think that he would come back. Therefore, I had the child. But in the end, he didn’t come back. In my most desperate time, Mr. Meng Zhuoer helped me.

He funded me to continue studying, but also asked people to take care of my child. I’ll never forget his kindness. So, after graduation, I put a child in the care of my relatives at home in Finland, and had a Swiss man help him do things, until now.”

“When did you know that he was kidnapped?”

“Just tonight, Adams called me on the phone, I heard my son’s voice. Adams told me that if I don’t go to a lawyer, and apply for a custody transfer within three days, he’ll immediately kill my son. I, I don’t know what to do....” At this point, Alice couldn’t help but cry on Masashi’s shoulder.

“Don’t worry. Your son will be fine.” After silent for a moment, Masashi gently said something.

# Chapter 77 - Feelings

---

At 8 in the morning, Alice went to Masashi's room only to find no one there.

Where did he go?

Thinking of that phone call last night, Alice's heart was throbbing faster.

She had thought of calling the police, but soon got rid of the idea. Adams had sold weapons for so many years, if it was reported to the police, then they should have already at an earlier time gotten the information and seized him, but how was he able to get off scot-free.

Perhaps my only hope now is that strange youth. Maybe he really has a way to do something about this.

But thinking of Adams's forces, she felt that she was too naïve. No matter fierce that youth is, he was only one person, what can he do to help?

Is it really fine to go according to what 'he' said to do?

Thinking of this made her upset.

Furthermore, isn't there only about two days left? She thought

with a wry smile.

“Alice, Lei where?” Amy had just been in Masashi room, but couldn’t see him, then arrived with a puzzled face and asked.

“He’s out. We eat breakfast, okay?” Alice walked over to straighten out her hair with her hand.

“Ah.” Amy looked very disappointed.

Alice didn’t know how to comfort her and held her hand to go eat breakfast.

8 pm, Alice was accompanying Amy to watch TV. At this time, her phone suddenly rang.

She pressed the answer key, “Alice, could you hear my voice?” A voice with a happy expression resounded.

Hearing the voice, her heart immediately sunk, and then right away went to the hall.

“Adams, what are you doing?” Alice suppressed her rage. Her right hand clenched until it turned white.

“Nothing, just wanted to remind you that a day had passed, don’t forget you only have two remaining days left. Don’t make me wait too long. My patience is very limited.”

“You...., I know, please don’t Bouneau” Tears silently fell from Alice’s face.

Just after she spoke, busy tone rang out from the phone. Adams had already hung up.

Alice threw away the phone, suddenly felt like her whole body became icy cold.

She took a bottle of white wine from the wine rack. Her hands were trembling as she unscrewed the cap, raising her head as she drinks a glass of wine.

As she was half-drunk and half-conscious, she felt a very soft thing, rubbing her face.

She opened her eyes and saw Amy’s concerned look. Her small hands were gently stroking her face.

“Alice, don’t cry....” The little girl said, stressing each syllable.

Looking at Amy’s innocent face, Alice couldn’t help but to suddenly burst into tears as she hugged her little body.

At 11, Masashi came back.

Looking at the alcohol fumed all over the room and the lying on

the floor Alice, who was embracing the already fallen asleep Amy, he sunk into deep thought.

Pulling apart the hands on Amy, Masashi held up Alice's whole body.

Putting her in her own bed, the youth went back to the scene, and found Amy, who didn't know when she woke up, but this time was sitting on the floor as she rubbed her eyes.

"Lei..." Seeing Masashi, Amy cried as she ran over to hug him.

"Sorry to wake you up." Masashi bent down to hug her.

The little girl was clinging to the youth's neck as she laid her head on his shoulder, after a while looked up at him, "Lei, Alice is very sad."

"I know. Don't worry, everything will be okay. I promise." Masashi gently touched her face and said.

"Ah." The little girl, again, laid her head on the youth's shoulders.

The next morning, Masashi went out again.

Alice had no desire to think about where the youth went. The whole afternoon, she spent as she either restlessly sitting or

standing.

Soon it was evening, the anxiety in Alice's heart increased more and more.

Fortunately, when the wall clock became 23:00, Adams didn't call again. Otherwise, she thought that she'd collapse soon after.

In the 24:00, she finally despaired, and tomorrow, no, it should be said that today was the deadline.

Sitting quietly as if a long time, a dark brew guilt filled her whole heart.

She couldn't help but want to get drunk, when suddenly the youth quietly walked towards her.

"Alice." The youth shouted in a low voice.

Alice turned to look at him, her face silently streaming down with tears, but she still didn't say a word.

The teenager walked up to her, took her hand that was reaching for the bottle of wine on the table, then looked at her silently.

Seeing him, Alice's emotions calmed down a little bit.

At that time, the youth spoke, “Is there anything you want to tell me?”

Hearing this sentence, Alice didn't understand.

“Lei Yin, you...”

The youth waved his hand, stopping her from saying anything, “Just answer my first question. Is there anything you want to tell me?” His face showed a unique seriousness.

Alice looked at him, she found the teenager tonight was completely different from the usual. There was a difference, but she couldn't tell what it was.

Silent for a moment, she said: “I'm sorry, I can't quite understand what you mean.”

The teenager who Alice didn't see today was looking at her, and after a while, he said dismissively, “You go out with me.”

“Where?”

“You'll know when we get there.” Then, the youth took the lead and went out.

Although puzzled, based on her trust in the youth, Alice still followed behind him.



“Get in the car.” The teenager took her in front of a black Bentley that she had never seen before.

Normally, Alice would have asked who’s car this was, but seeing the way the youth spoke, she had instead sat inside in silence.

The Black Bentley with an alarming speed sped through the highway. Along the way, the boy didn’t say a word, while Alice didn’t know what to say at that moment. For a time, the car was silent.

After ten minutes, Alice really couldn’t stand the oppressive atmosphere, so she reached to turn on the radio.

With a melodious light music, she relaxed a little bit.

She looked at the teenager in the driver’s seat and found that he was really completely different from his usual self tonight. A strange feeling in her heart rose.

Half an hour later, the car stopped at a youth before the similarly large manor house.

“We’ve arrived, let us go in.” The teenager opened the door to help her.

“Lei Yin, why did you bring me here?” Alice finally said.

“You’ll know when you go in.” The youth said dismissively.

Although full of doubts, she still followed the youth to the door of the house.

The youth knocked on the door, and soon, a tall young Asian wearing a black suit opened the door.

“Hello, Sir.” The young man bowed to him and said.

“The other people?” The youth asked him.

“Besides me, other than the 18th and 19th, everyone else is already waiting there for the Lord.”

“Where are they?”

“In the room.”

The teenager nodded, walking into the house.

Because the two were talking in Chinese, Alice didn’t know what they were saying, but seeing the attitude of the young man towards the youth, she was full of awe while she was looking at the youth.

“Miss, come in.” Alice was a bit overwhelmed at the time when

suddenly the young man spoke to her politely.

Finally, Alice followed Masashi and went inside.

# Chapter 78 - Night Visit

---

Through the dimly lit halls, the two arrived in front of a large room on the second floor.

Standing next to the door was a brown haired man.

Seeing the youth, the men, like before, immediately bowed at the youth.

The youth waved his hand and said to him: “We want to go in.”

The man opened the door, then made a gesture signifying to go in.

The youth took the lead and went in first, and Alice was the second to enter the room. As she entered there she saw a man sitting in the middle of the room, she was surprised and couldn't help but cover her mouth.

“Why are you doing this?” After being shocked, Alice furiously looked at the teenager.

“Just letting you lovers get married.” The youth said calmly.

Alice's whole body shook, “I don't understand what you're saying?”

“Really?” Masashi sneered, arriving at the center of the room, he tore off the towel in the mouth of the man tied up in a chair.

“Lei Yin, what do you actually want to do?” Just after the towel was removed, the man immediately asked him loudly.

“Compared with that arrogant Adams, you’re really much smarter. Mr. Murphy.” Masashi sat on the chair in front of him, faintly looking at the normally mild-mannered man.

“Are you Adams’s man?” Murphy seemed a bit pale.

“Well, do you think Adams’s could afford someone like me?” Masashi sneered.

“Why did you capture me here for? Do you want to extort me?” Hearing his reply, Murphy was somewhat relieved.

“Must you continue to play around, Mr. Murphy? Now that I brought Alice here, can’t you understand what’s happening?”

“I don’t understand what you’re saying?”

“Worthy of being good partners, even the words used to deny is exactly the same.

Actually, this plan is quite good, but you shouldn’t have made a few mistakes.

First, the general proceedings, Meng Zhuo'er might have a considerable legacy to give to his only daughter Amy, so long as Amy also accidentally dies, then it would naturally be given to the family, that is, you three brothers would inherit it.

But in fact, as you already know the content, you know that even if Amy were to get into an accident, you would still get nothing, so you don't really want to kill her, but you'll just have to do more to get it. That's why, you and Alice sent a sniper, your goal was very simple, it was just to give Adams a wrong message and let him think that you don't know the contents of the will. Making him let his guard down.

Because your forces are far inferior to Adams, that's reasonable.

Unfortunately, in Nepal I save Amy, you knew from a message via Alice, that is, I may be hazardous to your plan, so you arranged a sniper, hoping to incidentally kill me.

It's worth mentioning that the sniper you got was quite good, I really did almost have my life hung up. But the problem here was, why was the sniper so good, but still didn't cause any damage to Amy and Alice, two ordinary people weren't harmed?

Furthermore, several minutes before the sniper shot, I happened to be outside Alice's room, and at that time I also heard Alice's cellphone ring. Her call didn't take too long, as immediately after a gunfire resounded. Don't you think that's too coincidental?

If I guessed it right, then the phone call was actually you giving her a signal. Did I guess it right? Mr. Murphy.”

“You have the nerve to mention such baseless things. Relying just on these, you decided that the murderer behind this was me?” Murphy sneered.

“Of course not. You don’t know that while Amy is a child with autism, but it’s also because of this, that she could exquisitely sense the emotion of the people around her. In other words, she could feel whether the other person had a malicious thought or have a goodwill, regardless of how well that person could hide it. Perhaps you might think that this is nonsense, but I believe that she does have this ability. You in addition to Adams, is the second to make Amy frightened.”

Listening to this Murphy laughed, “You rely on such a shred of evidence that can’t be proven and still conceitedly seized me here. It’s just ridiculous.”

Masashi quietly let him finish laughing, and then suddenly clapped.

Murphy and Alice were very puzzled when a young man wearing a tight black suit dragged a man as he walked into the room.

When Murphy saw the man being dragged, he faintly noticed the man’s face, making his expression suddenly change.

“Remember him? He’s the sniper who you invited. I also spent a huge amount of time just to find him.” Masashi said to him.

“What evidence do you have that could prove that I sent him?”  
Murphy Calmed down and looked at Masashi.

“Indeed, I don’t have any evidence, because to come into contact with killers, require the assignment to given to him through an intermediary each time. Therefore, they never know the people who employ them. But I didn’t bring him to try to prove anything, but simply did this to vent out my pent up anger.” Masashi stepped on the killer.

“So you don’t have any evidence?” Murphy sneered.

“Tonight I’ve heard too many times the word ‘proof.’ In fact, people like me who don’t have any evidence, and because I’m not a cop, I can kill you at any time I want, without even flinching. But in order to convince you, I’ll satisfy your curiosity.” At that time, he took out a small tape recorder and pressed the play button.

—

“Is there really no other way to this?”

“Alice, calm down, Adams is just too powerful, so I absolutely can’t save the child. Moreover, don’t forget, he’s not even your child.”



“But Bouneau’s just five years old, reporting to the police should be good, I just can’t see somebody in danger and do nothing about it.”

“Informing the police wouldn’t be able to do anything about it, with Adams’s attitude, he would immediately kill the kid. Baby, don’t think too much. When this is done, if you like, as soon as it’s done we’ll give birth to a child, okay?”

“But....”

—

At that point, the youth switched off the recorder and then turned his head over to look at the paled Alice, who has burst into tears.

“You really disappointed me. When I was suspicious of you, I put a monitor on you. At first, I also hoped that I was just worried about it too much, but unfortunately, I heard the worst results.” Masashi looked at her coldly.

Alice couldn’t hold it in, and kneeled down on the ground crying.

Masashi could no longer maintain his calm, and turned around seeing a bit nervous Murphy, “You’re really smart and very patient. You already knew from the start that Adams would oppose Meng Zhuo’er, that’s why five years ago, you made Alice into a board piece and send her to his side. An unmarried mother who

was left behind, the dropout had no way out, and the accidental meeting with Meng Zhuo'er, these were all a script that you already arranged.

Your plan ever since had been very successful, and all according to your plan Alice obtained Meng Zhuoer's trust, and now became Amy's guardian."

"Who actually are you?" Murphy glowing with bloodshot eyes looked at the youth.

# Chapter 79 - Chess Player

---

“I’m just an outsider. You are indeed an excellent chess player, but again, a good chess player can always be seen clearly by the spectator.”

Masashi turned to look at the already cry mixed-race beauty, “Alice Lynn, do you know what Amy’s assessment about you? She said that you were very pitiful, although she didn’t know why, she knew that you’ve been suffering.

You’re a good natured person who doesn’t want to hurt anybody, but you shouldn’t fall in love with a man that shouldn’t be loved.

Do you think that kid is really helping you playing the unmarried mother part?

You’re wrong. Murphy was very clear of Adams’s power, and he is unable to protect you. Therefore, the child is actually a bait. Adams believe that he can use the child to threaten you. Because he thought that he has grabbed the piece that can compel you to obey, Adams did not send someone to catch you again. That’s the main purpose of why Murphy let you adopt the child.”

Hearing Masashi’s words, Alice Lynn looked at Murphy with disbelieving look.

Murphy didn’t make a sound, the muscle on his face slightly twitched.

“Why, just a bit more and I can succeed. I can’t reconcile this, I can’t reconcile this....” Murphy fiercely looked at the teenager.

Masashi calmly watched him.

Murphy did not like how the youth look at him, and somewhat hysterically shouted at that youngster: “Nobody in the family think highly of me. In the eyes of the people, there’s only Meng Zhuo’er and big brother. I’m just their shadow, an invisible shadow.

I don’t accept this. I want to prove to everybody. As long as I can get my hands on Meng Zhuo’er’s share, I can do better than him. I’m the only one that can bring the Family to thrive.

Why, why did you ruin my plan?”

Masashi looked at him for a moment, then suddenly stood up, and punched his stomach.

“Ah!” This punch was too strong, making him cried out in pain.

“Self-righteous savior-complex fellow.” Masashi sneered, and then made a meaningful glance at the standing to the side man in black. The man knew this signal and pulled out a gleaming dagger from his body.

Seeing that man was slowly approaching him, Murphy's face grew pale. But the inborn proudness of the Dai Fei family would not allow him to make any act of begging for mercy. In the end, he quietly closed his eyes.

"No....Lei Yin, I beg you, don't kill him, Lei Yin...." The nearby Alice Lynn called out and wanted to rush over, however, she was tightly held by that Brown haired man.

To the couple's complete surprise, the man with the dagger cut the rope on Murphy's body.

"You, what do you mean by this?" Murphy watched the youngster with disbelieve.

"What, do you want me to kill you?" Masashi leaned against the side of the window and dismissively said.

Murphy closely looked at him, and after a while, he began to calm down, "Well then tell me, how much do you want?"

Masashi closely looked at him, and suddenly laughed. After a while, he coldly said: "Mr. Murphy, you're mistaken, I don't want that."

"Then what do you want? Concordia's share? I'm sorry, this is not possible, before we inherit the legacy of the previous generations, we have signed a contract. Except for the Dai Fei family members, outsiders can't get any shares." Knowing that the

teenager wasn't going to kill him, Murphy restored his calm.

Masashi went over to him, "Mr. Murphy, you are completely mistaken, I don't want anything." The youth slowly said.

Murphy revealed an honest mistake look, he completely unable to guess this youngster's intention.

"Even if tomorrow you let Alice Lynn go to the law firm to handle the custody transfer formalities, I won't stop you.

Didn't you say you'll do better than Meng Zhuo'er? I'll give you this opportunity."

"What do you really want?" Murphy is a businessman, and he doesn't believe that there's a free lunch in this world.

Murphy ignored him and said: "Even if you fail, it doesn't matter, because I never thought that you could be successful. Whatever you do, even if you brought down the Concordia group, it doesn't matter.

You ask me what I want? I'm sorry, I don't want anything. I have no interest in your Dai Fei family at all."

At this point, Masashi glanced at Alice Lynn, "I initially wanted to kill you all to avoid future problem. But for Amy, I overturned this idea. Alice Lynn, you are one of the few people that Amy willingly accept. If you are killed, Amy will lose the person that

take care of her. I told you before, you are a good-natured woman, so, I believe your feelings for Amy is real. Therefore, for that kid, I'll let you off. Murphy, you're very lucky, because of Alice Lynn, I will also let you off. I could kill you, but to do so, Alice Lynn would hate me. Although she had a little impact on me, there's no guarantee that she will not use Amy to threaten me. Because the hatred of a woman is impenetrable.

Another point is, it would probably be a bit better to give Meng Zhuo'er's shares to you than to that madman Adams.

I'm not worried that you'll waste all of Amy's property, if she needs it, I can give her more.

Maybe you don't believe what I just told you, but that's your problem, not mine." With that, the youth quietly walked toward the door.

This is Masashi's real thought, after knowing their action, he really wanted to kill them. But after killing them, what about the kid? If it weren't for the care of Alice Lynn, Amy might become more withdrawn into her autism. He knew that he can't stay in Switzerland to take care of Amy. Of course, he also wanted to take her back to Japan to take care of her, but he thought that the school environment in Japan is not suitable for a child like Amy. Therefore, he finally made such a plan.

Capturing Murphy here was just to warn him.

"You really don't want anything?" Murphy asked doubtfully.

“It was useless for me to say anything, time will prove everything. Although I will not interfere with your plan, but you best remember one thing, If I know that you’re messing with that kid, making her sad, you’ll be responsible for your own peril.” Masashi lightly said.

Murphy was dead silence.

“Well, I’ve spoken my piece, the two of you please return.”

Murphy took one look at him and then pulled Alice Lynn and went out.

“You send them back. Moreover, this sniper is at your disposal.” Masashi threw the car keys to the man in black.

“I know, sir.” After the man in black bowed toward Masashi, he dragged the fainting sniper out of the room.

Masashi walked to the door, and said toward the mixed race beauty who was ready to enter the car: “Alice Lynn, Amy is still at home waiting for you. If you’re rested enough, come back.”

Alice Lynn looked at him with a complex expression, then nodded and got into the car.

After watching the Bentley slowly disappearing, Masashi said to



the remaining two young men: “Let’s get out of here. Look’s like some people would not sleep well tonight.”

The Asian man asked for Masashi’s permission and ran back to the garage behind the house. Not long after, he drove a white Citroen to the front of Masashi.

“Where did this come from?” Masashi opened the door and asked.

“Sir, this car was just stolen.” The Asian youth replied.

Masashi nodded and didn’t make a sound.

One of the most important reason of why so many Billionaires settled in Switzerland is because of its beautiful scenery.

Many of the wealthy people who wants to enjoy life would build their house far away from the bustling streets toward the scenic countryside or suburb.

This is also true for Adams. His private mansion is located in a very quiet lake environment. Different from the other wealthy people who pursue the peaceful scene, he built this house so that he can conveniently talking to people about business. After all, his business is arm sale, so his guests are basically people who don’t want to be seen.

In approximately half a kilometer from Adams’s house, Masashi

trio got out of the car near an old warehouse.

The Asian youth came to the warehouse door and rhythmically knocked four times. After a while, the door opened, but no one came out.

Masashi was satisfied, he noticed that in different locations outside of the warehouse, there is a total of four people lying in ambush. It seemed to him that the quality of the group of people here is very good.

Inside the warehouse, there's only one fluorescent lamp.

Thirteen black leotard uniformed men simultaneously stood and bowed toward Masashi, "Greetings, sir."

"No need to do obeisance, wait until you visit the grave, then you can do it. Hey kid, why did you also come?" Masashi said to the tall man amongst that thirteen men.

"When the Master has some matter, the disciple would naturally come to help." The black uniformed Reili grinningly and said.

"Oh, is that so?" Masashi smiled and walked over to him.

Seeing Masashi smiled at him, Reili's heart knew something was not right. He was just about to take two steps back, but it was too late. Masashi's nearly invisible hand fiercely knocked him on the head.

“Nosy guy.” Masashi coldly snorted.

“Master, I just want to help you out, you don’t need to hit me that hard,” Reili grumbled, rubbing his head.

# Chapter 80 - Commence

---

“Do you think this is an amusement park, in the case you accidentally die, what would happen to the Black Dragon? I’ll take note of this, afterward, if you once again follow me, you better get yourself ready. When did you get here?” “Just got off the plane. It’s been a long time since I’ve gone with Master to kill someone, it’s also rare that you suddenly want a big fight, of course, I want to come.” Rei Li said righteously.

“You militants, there has been a lot of wars in the world because of people like you.” Masashi gave him a look.

“Master, you left me, today I, your disciple is revolting to depend on the elder for his long-term teachings.” Rei Li with a hippie smile said. So long as it wasn’t a serious matter, the two master and disciple would frequently have this kind of conversation with each other.

Masashi’s eyes stared, just as he was about to attack, the nervous Rei Li hurriedly drew back immediately taking several steps, this time, contrary to what one might expect he clearly learned from experience.

Too lazy to care for him, Masashi who was right next to a 30-year-old man who had a scar at the corner of his eye, asked him: “What’s the situation inside?”

The man took out a blueprint, spreading it out on the table, respectfully responded: “Sir, through our observations, except for the ordinary workers as well as female servants, we’ve determined that there’s basically 15-17 people in the resident, each having a

pistol, and all also received professional bodyguard training. In addition to that, they also possess three German police dogs.

Starting this morning until now, we could now determine that there's a total of 17 bodyguards in the house, in addition, the target person is also inside.

This blueprint is the overview of the interior of the house, the house was built by a construction company in the neighborhood, but because it was done three years ago, the original blueprint may have some inconsistencies. In order to make up for this shortcomings, we've tried to investigate the things that we're done to the house in the previous three years and have also made corresponding changes to the blueprint. Therefore, this plan should be 98% similar to the structure of the house. The red area is the location of the monitor, and the blue part is alarm device while the black digit is the places that are guarded along with the number of bodyguards guarding it. The Red cross is the last room where the target is.”

Masashi silently looked at the blueprints, writing down the building as the blueprint indicated in his brain. Rei Li was now strangely serious, as he also thoroughly looked at the plan.

“How would you solve the Monitor and alarm?” After a while, Masashi looked up and asked.

“Sir, if there's sufficient time, we will send someone posing as a worker or a main to enter inside to resolve the issue. But now because the time is limited, my plan is to directly blow up the nearby electric cable, thus interrupting the electric power in this

area. Then as they start the electric generator, we'll infiltrate the house. After infiltrating, we'll destroy the first power generator, making the room would still have no power. Because we're equipped with night vision, we can still battle in the dark, making us have an absolute advantage."

"Them powering the generator, takes how much time?" Rei Li asked.

"It should take them at least 3 minutes to power the generator. If the situation is a little better, it may be delayed to 5 minutes."

"Three minutes?" Masashi looked at Rei Li.

Rei Li immediately understood, and said to him. "Master, please rest assured. They're all experts in the dark, three minutes would be enough for them."

"How's the surrounding environment?" Masashi asked the man.

"Sir, there's no other residence within one kilometer around here, there's only a few warehouse like this. As long as there's no use of heavy weapons like rocket launchers, others shouldn't hear the shots."

"It seems that this is indeed a good place to kill people." Masashi turned around to say to them: "Start preparing."

For the results of the investigation in such a short amount of

time, Masashi felt quite satisfied. Nobody far better understood 'to know thyself is to know thy enemies' compared to him, he who had innumerable years of experience and profoundly knew the importance of these characters. Any small mistake could lead to failure, and failure would often result in death. He could care less about his own life and death, but he had no right to ignore other people's life and death.

For wanting to eradicate this disaster Adams as soon as possible, he would have more carefully investigated the targets movement pattern before beginning.

The Black Dragon's dark group was a very special organization, very few people knows its existence because from the whole Black Dragon, and they only take order from one person, the boss. Its main task is to assassinate. Lei Yin, established this special organization, selecting and training its members unimaginably strict.

Each execution of task, had 100% completion rate, and in order to reduce casualties as much as possible, they would survey all the enemies as it was the most important and time-consuming thing to do.

Hearing Masashi, these men at once respectively walked to the warehouse intending to wear an all around outfit. The man with a scar went outside and whistled. Not long after, four men wearing black tights came and went without a word, as they prepared at the same time.

Then, joined Rei Li including the 20 people methodically arrange

in a calm and fast-phased manner as they each prepare and wear their outfit.

After two minutes, the fully-armed Rei Li had arrived in front of Masashi holding a package.

“Master, this is yours.”

Masashi received the package, taking out a pair of black gloves from the inside and right away wearing it. Afterward, he wore a black windproof coat, finally held a black head gear that only exposed the eyes that were attached to the windproof coat.

“Master, aren’t you wearing the body armor?” Rei Li took out the armor from the package.

“I don’t want to put it on. It would simply be bounding one’s own hand and feet.”

“Master...”

Rei Li turned around and looked at him, Masashi sighed, “Fine, I’ll wear it.” Then took the piece of body armor from his hand.

Rei Li immediately smiled.

When everyone was ready, Masashi glanced around including their faces, all of them concealed their faces with a piece of black in



the center, a trace of strange smile rose from his mouth.

“The entire group of terrorists.”

“We have always been righteous.” Rei Li also opened his mouth and said.

Masashi smiled, putting on the black headgear in his hand, “commence.”

# Chapter 81 - Sleepless Night

---

In about 200 meters away from Adams's house, a medium freight vehicle with an unlit driving light parked silently in the thick patch of grass. Immediately followed by twenty shadows quietly jumped down from the vehicle.

"I'll do something about those three police dogs. When you receive my signal, you can cut off the power."

"I know, Master." Rei Li's said with a slightly excited tone.

Ten years, ten years of not experiencing this feeling. Master, really came back.

Masashi, was like a ghost, who disappeared in the moonless night, as Rei Li was lost in thought.

At the early age of 17, he knew that he could never reach even half the level of his master.

Master seldom took part in missions, even if it was only a few times, he still couldn't completely see through limits of this man.

He thought that maybe there's no one in the world that is truly a match against his master.

After that year, he hadn't practiced the knife and instead practice

the pistol. Although the man was also very powerful in this aspect, after all, it was a long-range weapon, it's entirely different from a sword or a knife that relies on one's physic, so long as you practice hard, you will one day obtain the approval of this man.

When he was six years old, that year was the moment when his master rescued him, at that time when he saw the man he had a sense of awe that cannot be put into words.

As he grew up and gained more experience, he began to feel the great strength of the man.

In this world he didn't believe that there's a God, in his eyes, his master is the God.

After 5 minutes, Rei Li felt a jolt on his left wrist signifying the signal, and he knew that his master had succeeded.

Then Rei Li with the 19 people silently ran to the outside of the mansion. Not long after they've arrived, Masashi like a ghost appeared, they were unable to guess when and where he had appeared from.

Masashi gestured to the 30-year-old man, the man immediately understood, and took out a small box from his body, opening it and immediately started pressing a few keys.

Not long after his inputs, the whole mansion suddenly plunged into darkness.

Masashi waved, and first jump inside. The members of the group, though it was dark they were still the elite of the elite, but no one was able to do what he had done and 'fly' over a four-meter-tall wall. They had to use the suit's self-climbing tool to climb. However, because they were usually well-trained, all of them only took 15 seconds to climb over it.

Inside, Rei Li saw the three dogs scattered on the ground dead, at the entrance, there were also two people lying there. From their outward appearance, a wound could not be seen on the two men and the dogs, but Rei Li knew that the wound was on their forehead.

It was a pistol, Masashi preferred hidden weapons like this. This thing also concentrates on internal force and later is reloaded again, it's might is not inferior in any aspect with other bullets, moreover when it has opened fire it doesn't create sound. What's more important, is that a pistol at best has seven rounds of bullets. Coin, iron sheet, knife... so long as it's iron or a material that's hard, he could use it endlessly, without needing any rest. But this thing also has shortcomings, if the distance is quite far, using the gun would be much better.

Masashi made a few gestures with his hand, Rei Li nodded, and with nine people went to the back of the mansion.

Then, Masashi made a gesture to the remaining ten, those people immediately understood, and immediately divided into two groups climbing up along both balconies. While he followed the group of people that climbed on the balcony at the left side.

“Why’s there a sudden blackout, really damn.” In the darkness, a red point was partly visible; the bodyguard smoked as he said.

“There will be electricity soon.” Another bodyguard said as he yawned.

“You look like your dead, you went to a nightclub last night, didn’t you?” The bodyguard said as he smoked a cigarette.

“Yes, I went with Kevin. There was a new girl, very attractive. The stature and look were good, but the price was expensive. However, the money paid is well worth it. Tomorrow evening, I won’t be on duty, do you want to go and have a look?”

“Hey, why aren’t you talking?”

The other bodyguard held out his hand to try to pat his shoulder. However, he found that his clothes were very wet.

“Aren’t you hot? I’m sweating so much.”

He flung his hand and discovered that the sweat seemed to have a little creamy feeling. Just as he was about to speak, a hand had covered his mouth, without enough time he wasn’t able to react, and only thought that he felt a cool sensation on his neck, and then a surge of heat came out from his throat. At that moment, he knew it wasn’t sweat, but a hand.

In a large room on the fourth floor, an already asleep Adams suddenly woke up not knowing why.

He squints his eyes, and naturally reached out to the bedside to turn on the lights, but the lights didn't turn on.

Strange, why didn't the light turn on?

He climbed out of the bed to open the rooms headlights, when suddenly, in the dark he seemed to have seen what could be considered as a human shadow.

At this moment, Adams was alarmed, but because of his years of survival instinct, he naturally drew back to the bedside.

But just when he jumped to his bed, a very light sound was heard, and at that same moment, he immediately felt a sharp pain coming at from his thigh.

Adams knew that he was shot, but he knew one thing, if he didn't fight back, he was really going to die.

Fortunately, the mystery man didn't continue shooting after his first shot. Adams took advantage of this opportunity to hastily reach under his pillow.

Why isn't it here? For a time, Adams heart sunk into despair, even forgetting the severe pain that was coming from his thigh.

“Are you looking for your gun? Mr. Adams.” The mystery person threw something on his bed.

Adams took the gun and fired four shots towards the mystery person.

However, no bullet shot was heard, and only a few ‘katcha, katcha, katcha’ sounds came.

“Did you really think I would give back a loaded gun to you? Mr. Adams.” The mystery person laughed.

“Who exactly are you?” Adams asked loudly.

“This is nothing like the usual you, Mr. Adams. Do you still can’t hear my voice?”

“You, are you Lei Yin?” Adams asked incredulously.

“It seems that your memory isn’t too bad.”

“How did you come in?” Adams was both startled and angry.

“Of course, I walked in. I came over to repay you for your hospitality, Mr. Adams.” With that, the teenager shot at his other thigh.

Because the gun was equipped with a silencer, the sound of the shot was very soft, but to Adams, it was very loud. A pitiful yell reverberated inside the room.

In the darkness, an applause can be heard, “quite splendid, Mr. Adams, for you to still have the idea of calling your subordinates. But what a pity, your bodyguards have completely dropped down, but as for your workers and female servant, they had also run away in fear after hearing the sound of gunfire. Certainly, they would right away report to the police. But when the police arrives, they’ll still need the firefighters.” At that moment, Masashi snapped his fingers.

Standing next to him was two people in black outfit immediately carrying two cans of gasoline and pouring it around the room.

“Please don’t kill me, how much money do you want? I’ll give you everything!” Adams’ face turned pale as he begged Masashi for mercy.

“I’m sorry, I have more money than you. I also have something to tell you, the guns we’re holding were also bought from you.” With that, the youth waved his hands, and immediately a coin came across toward the man’s throat while Adams stared at him with big eyes clutching his neck as he slowly fell down on his bed.

The youth looked at him for the last time, and then shot at the place covered with gasoline, suddenly, a surge of flames took place.



The three people ran out from the room and went towards where the van was.

Seeing that there were only eight men in black waiting there, Masashi asked: “Where’s your boss?”

The man with a scar said: “Sir, the boss took the other nine people to do something.”

Masashi nodded and said to them: “Tonight, you’ve all worked hard.”

“My lord is modest.” The man respectfully answered.

Looking at the mansion burning fiercely, Masashi said: “Let’s go. The cops are coming.”

“Yes, sir.”

# Chapter 82 - Dawn

---

In the North Western shore of Lake Zurich, a similar manor house with six young people, all wearing casual clothes, were either leisurely watching TV or playing card.

At this time, a knock on the door came.

The same time as this, the young people looked at each other, then continued to do their own thing. Only the right hand or left hand were intentionally or unintentionally place on their waist. Among them, the one of the young people watching TV moved towards the door and opened it.

What came was several man wearing black windproof coats similar to the age of the young men in the room. The man standing in the fore front had a strong sense of presence.

“Boss is well.” The six men in the room all stood up and saluted towards the black man.

The man nodded, took off his windproof coat and handed to one of the young men.

“Master?” The man asked.

“My lord is in the library on the second floor.”

Going to the room on the second floor, the man knocked gently on the door, “Come in.” There was a clear voice coming from the inside.

Opening the door, Rei Li saw the youth lifting his thigh while drinking tea, having relaxed, leisure, and carefree appearance.

Rei Li didn’t speak. He went inside picked up the tea pot and poured himself a full glass, gulping it down. Then he went and poured another in his cup.

Seeing the thousand dollars a pound of Shifeng Longjing tea being drank like water, binge drinking, the youth still didn’t say anything, but gently smiled, as a way of telling this guy that he was absolutely throwing pearls before a swine.

“Did you get the job done?” He was almost finished drinking the pot of tea when the youth suddenly asked.

“The kid has been rescued, and has been sent back to the woman there, and the stolen cars were also sunk into the lake. Also, anything that would likely expose our identity was burned, nothing left behind. This should fix it.” Rei Li said while wiping his sweat.

“Ah, you’ve worked hard.” Masashi nodded, taking a sip of tea.

“Master, what’s with you speaking like this. However I actually have a question that I wish to ask you?”

“Have something to say, just say it.” Masashi yawned, looked up at the clock on the wall. It’s four o’clock in the morning.

“I don’t understand why Master told me to save that woman’s son. I feel very uncomfortable with that woman named Alice. If it were me, I would have first raped her and then killed her.” Rei Li said carelessly.

Masashi ill-humoredly looked at this seemingly like gentleman, but in reality was a ruffian guy, “You make Changan’s life difficult, I just wonder how he put up with you for so many years.”

“Master, what do you mean by this, you ought to say, that if it weren’t for me accompanying him for these many years, he would have already suffocated.” Rei Li refused to accept it.

This was completely not unreasonable, with Changan’s personality, he would usually not speak with anyone. Having this ruffian accompanying him in the side had also made him a bit lively.

“Stupid fellow. Actually, my motive for rescuing that little rascal is very simple, he wanted to be rescued, so he’s been rescued. Moreover, this matter to you and me would only require little effort to do.”

“What’s with this explanation, as you say, I contributed our complete net worth and also used a slight effort, but after contributing, what do I eat?” Rei Li had not lost heart.

Masashi looked at him and after a while said: “Don’t forget, twenty years ago, you were also just a kid waiting to be rescued.”

Hearing this, Rei Li went silent.

“Little Rei, we’re not a messenger of justice, but a notorious underworld criminals. But so what? We handle matter and never caring about employing other people with different complexion, whoever blocks our way we kill, whoever dare to show weakness and go askew we’ll get rid of even if he’s one of us. Similarly, whoever said that criminal underworld cannot do good? I wanted to save that kid on my own whim, that’s why I saved him. Twenty years ago, it’s because I wanted to save you, that you became my only disciple. So-called having one’s wish, can do the matter that oneself want to do. Of course, if it’s too dangerous, I won’t make you go, after all I have wasted many rice on you. If you hung up, I would have gotten a big loss.”

Rei Li looked at him, as if it was after a long time, then seriously said to Masashi: “Master, I understand what you mean. After going back, I will immediately look for several little kids for you, I’ll help you form a Loli Legion.” Just after he finished, he immediately ran out of the room, and also locked at the other side of the door.

(TL-yeh apparently he meant loli, which is Luo li, don’t know if that’s what he meant, but that’s what I think he meant)

“Rei Li, you bastard, I’ll kill you!” The youth crazily howled, kicking the entire door down, then pursued to the direction where

that silly man escaped towards.....

8:00 am, Amy came to the hall wearing pajamas, searching all the room in the hall, but didn't see the two people. For a time, she felt very uneasy.

“Miss Amy, you wait a bit, I'll go prepare breakfast.” As the maid was cleaning the hall, she saw the young mistress and immediately greeted her.

Amy looked at her, then gently nodded.

For a small owner who didn't like to speak, everyone had gotten accustomed to it, the maid bent at the waist and went out.

Soon, the breakfast was brought. Delivering it for her was actually the steward Bacon while holding her breakfast.

“Miss Amy, breakfast is good, please eat it while it's still hot.” The German man politely said.

Amy nodded and quietly walked over to the table, sitting down quietly eating breakfast.

Eating less than a quarter, Amy put down her knife and fork.

“Miss Amy, please eat a little more of it. If you don't like the pasta, then I'll have the people make something else, okay?” Bacon

said.

Amy shook her head, after a while, she suddenly asked: “Lei Yin....Now where go...?”

“Mr. Lei Yin with Miss Luo Diman (Alice) drove out last night, but until now hasn’t come back. I think they should have somethings to take care of, and should be back soon. Miss, please don’t worry.” Bacon comforted her.

Amy didn’t make a sound, just sat there, looking a little confused, as if she was thinking.

Seeing her this way, Bacon sighed in his heart, knowing that she won’t eat, and had to go clean up the dishes.

At this time, outside, a footstep could suddenly be heard. Bacon who was thinking who it was, actually saw the nearby Amy with a pleasantly surprised expression jumped down from her chair and ran.

After a while, he saw a slender youth holding Amy as he entered the hall.

Seeing the youth, Bacon didn’t relax on his own initiative.

“Good morning, Mr. Lei Yin.” Bacon saluted to the youth.

“Good morning, Mr. Bacon.” The youth smiled while nodding to him.

“Have you had breakfast? If not, I’ll ask somebody to make something for you.”

“Then I’ll have to trouble Mr. Bacon.” He mentioned, as he really was feeling a little hungry.

“You’re too kind, just a moment please.” With that, Bacon went outside.

Seeing that there was more than half of the Italian food left over, the youth pinched the little girl’s face, said: “Little rascal you’re not obedient, didn’t I tell you to eat properly, why have you only eaten a little? I’ll spank your butt.”

“Lei...Amy is eating....haven’t finished eating.”

“Do you really?” The youth narrowed his eyes as he looked at her.

The little girl blushed, and buried herself into his arms.

“You must finish eating this meal completely. Otherwise, I won’t go with you to the amusement park and play today.”

“Really? Today, take me....to go to the amusement park?” The



little girl suddenly looked up.

“It depends on whether you were naughty or nice.” The youth said with a laugh.

“Amy behaved, Amy behaved....” The little girl flushed with excitement.

“Then finish eating.” The youth said, pointing at the spaghetti.

“Ah.” The little girl quickly got down from him, sitting on the chair again.

Back from the outside, Bacon was surprised to see that the young lady was eating the pasta, but when he saw the teenager sitting next to her, he soon understood.

“Sir Lei Yin, your breakfast will soon be here, please wait.” Bacon said.

“Don’t worry, take your time, and I’m not too hungry.” The teenager across the table picked up a newspaper to read.

Strange, why there was no news, Masashi had a look at the date above, and turned out it was the news from yesterdays.

“Mr. Lei Yin, excuse me, where’s Miss Luo Diman?” Bacon asked.

“She’s temporarily dealing with something, probably will be back in a few days.” Masashi looked up and said.

Bacon was finally relieved. Fortunately, both of them were fine.

## Chapter 83 - Outing

---

Looking at the little girl skipping out of the door, Masashi laughed.

After returning to Switzerland, because they wanted to avoid the so-called assassination, they were afraid to let her out and had even made her panic.

After going inside the car, Masashi fastened her seat belt, then started the car. Black Bentley has a nice sleek line as quiet as a panther and as vigorous as a Mercedes-Benz.

Arriving at the amusement park, Masashi parked in a good spot, then took Amy's hand walking towards the main entrance to buy tickets.

Because today was a Wednesday, there were only a few that came to the amusement park to play. However, one can also see that everywhere there would be a few adults holding their child's hands while walking around.

After they had entered, a car parked 300 meters away from the amusement park gently putting down the car window. A young man wearing a big square sunglasses said to himself: "Master, Master, you're too unfair When I was a little kid, why didn't you treat me better. All day you would force me to train martial arts. His grandmother, was a scriptwriter, so, because your uncle had the so-called miserable childhood, I had to also have a miserable childhood? After a period of time whispering to himself, he turned

his head looking at the man in the driver's seat and said: "Did the other team members settle?"

The man replied: "Yes, I had just contacted with them. They'll take different flights to go back in turn. From last night to now, there have been two groups of 8 people that have left...."

"Ah. Our plane tickets are in the afternoon, well what to do now? Well, let's just find a good nightclub, it's been a long time since I came to Switzerland to play."

"However, boss, it's still 9:00 AM, where can we find a nightclub that opens their doors this early." The man broke into sweat and said.

"This is indeed the case, forgot for a while. What to do now, I rarely come to Switzerland. I can't just go and play at the Ferris wheel like this little kid?"

"Boss, I heard that there's a new place where there's a 24-hour lap-dancing bar, would you like to go there and see?" A man suggested.

"Ah, there's such a thing, how'd you know that?" Rei LI felt it was a little strange.

"When we got off the plane, I bought this handy travel guide and looked at it, so I know about this place."

“Ah, you’re so thoughtful. Let’s go there and have a look.” Rei Li felt great.

“Yes, boss.” The man quickly starts the car.

The car didn’t really go that far when suddenly Rei Li felt his cellphone suddenly vibrate.

He took a look at his cell phone. He thought that it was just an advertisement and cursed as he opened to look, but seeing his phone, his complexion immediately had a big change.

He only saw a few word: Kid, you dare track me!

“Quick, quick. Immediately go to the airport, get the fastest flight back.” Rei Li shouted wildly.

“But, boss. Didn’t you say you wanted to go see a show?” The man asked, puzzled.

“Go lap-dancing, and then I’ll lose my life afterward. Just go to the airport!”

He had never seen his boss this alarmed, the men didn’t dare imagine what event had happened, and hurriedly went to the direction of the airport.

How was it that they have been so careful, but was still found out

by Master. It seems that experience man being energetic was true.

Thinking of this, Rei Li's eyes became swollen, and sight began to fade.

The bored man worriedly followed behind. Amy was actually playing very happily. And at this moment, she was filled with all kinds of dolls.

These were the prizes that she had won, but strictly speaking, it should be prizes that Masashi had helped her win.

Playing the shooting game, Masashi was responsible for helping with her aim, so she had only needed to press the trigger. Playing the throwing games, she just pointed with her fingers which one she had wanted, and Masashi would help her throw.

So, after several games, not only was she filled with prizes, there was even people around them watching.

Seeing so many come up, Amy seemed a bit nervous, and couldn't help but gently tug Masashi's clothes. Masashi looked at her and pulled her out of the crowd.

After coming to a place with only a few people, Amy restored her smiling face, and often looked at the dolls that she had won, admiringly looking at it.

"Hey, kid, what do you want to play next?" Masashi crouched

and wiped the sweat from her forehead with his sleeves, asked.

The little girl looked around and finally pointed at the amusement park carousel (Merry-go-round).

“Not just with your fingers, you have to say what you want, now say it again and let me hear.”

Amy looked at him a little puzzled, and then with a not very clear voice said: “Lei, Amy.... want to play that.”

“Well, from now on, no matter what you want to play you can, but must be spoken out, all right?”

The girl nodded.

“That’s foul, you can’t nod, you have to say it,” Masashi said with a smile.

“Amy...know.” The behaved little girl answered.

“Doing well, let’s play.” Then, the youth pulled the excited little girl and walked towards the carousel.

Playing till noon, Masashi took the little girl to eat a snack.

In fact, Masashi didn’t like fast food restaurant food, but children

generally love to eat fast food restaurant hamburger, fries and things like that and seemed to give Amy a look of an ordinary child's life, so he deliberately brought her here.

Because it was her first time to come to a fast-food restaurant, Amy had a very curious look.

Because of the neighboring amusement park was near the store, in order to attract the attention of children, they would arrange some staff to wear cartoon clothes to walk back and forth giving out balloons.

For those cartoon characters holding balloons in their hands, Amy also gave off a desired look.

“Do you want those balloon?” Masashi asked.

Amy subconsciously nodded, then remembered what Masashi had said, and began to add: “Yes.”

“If you want it, get it on your own.”

Amy immediately showed an embarrassed expression.

“It doesn't matter; don't you see the other kids getting one themselves? You can do it too.” Masashi encouraged her.

The little girl hesitated for a moment, finally jumped out of the



chair to take a few steps.

When she was halfway there, she looked back at Masashi.

Masashi showed her a look of encouragement. Amy looked at him for a moment and then walked slowly towards the cartoon character.

When Amy was holding a balloon in her hand, she had hurried back, making Masashi smile happily.

The little girl suddenly threw herself into his arms and hugged him, her hand still clutching on the balloon string....

After only a few mouthfuls of hamburger, Masashi didn't have any more appetite. But Amy enjoyed it, probably because it was her first time eating it.

"Kid, delicious?" Masashi looked at the happy little girl holding a fried chicken.

"Good.....eat." Because her mouth was full of food, she had answered vaguely.

"Then tomorrow we'll eat out again, then how about going for a ride somewhere else?"

"Tomorrow...also go out?" Amy put down her fried chicken, her

face making a pleasant surprise.

Masashi nodded.

“Lei....” Amy was too excited to speak.

Masashi smiled and gently patted her little face, but sighed in his mind. How many days could he still accompany her?

When they came out of the fast-food restaurant, Masashi’s cell phone rang. He looked at the number shown on his phone and knew that it was from Amy’s home.

90% it should be about that matter, Masashi pressed the answer key.

“Mr. Lei Yin?” The Butler, Bacon’s voice could be heard on the phone.

“I am. Is there something wrong, Mr. Bacon?”

“Hasn’t Mr. Lei Yin seen today’s newspaper?”

“Excuse me, I’m playing at the amusement park with Amy, so I haven’t read it. So what happened?”

“Yes, sir Adams’s home was attacked by unidentified thugs, Mr.

Adams was also confirmed to be dead in the room by the police.” Bacon said, after a moment of silence.

“What, such a thing happened?” Masashi’s tone seemed surprised, while also mentally cursed, his grandmother, unexpectedly I, your father am an evil-doer.

“Yes, after seeing the news the whole family was shocked. I just wanted to call and remind Mr. Lei Yin to be careful.”

“I know, thank you for your kindness. I’ll take good care of Amy.”

“That’s a relief. I wish you a good time.”

“Thank you.”

After closing the line, a faint smile appeared on Masashi’s face.

“Kid, want to continue to play? Or go to the zoo, there you can see lions, tigers, and elephants.” Masashi turned to the little girl and said.

“Okay.” Amy was very happy.

## Chapter 84 - Night Talk

---

“Mr. Lei Yin, can I speak to you about something?” At 9 o’clock in the evening, when the youth was accompanying Amy watching TV, the butler Bacon walked in.

“Of course, please have a sit, Mr. Bacon.” Masashi made a gesture.

Bacon sat on the sofa, and after a while emotionally let out a sigh, said: “there had been a lot of things happening recently, but I still can’t accept the news of Mr. Meng Zhuoer’s death.”

“It’s fine to grief, Mr. Bacon.”

“Mr. Meng Zhuoer’s not here anymore, and I really don’t know what to do with Amy. Although Miss Luo Diman is now the young lady’s guardian, but you have to know that Miss Luo Diman would someday marry. I believe that you Mr. Lei Yin know the young lady’s situation, except for you and Miss Luo Diman, she wouldn’t accept anyone else. It makes me very embarrassed, I don’t know what to do Mr. Lei Yin, do you have any idea what to do?” Bacon looked at the youth.

The youth looked at the engrossed Amy watching TV, and after a while turned back and said: “On this point, I have a proposal, I hope that after a period of time, Mr. Bacon would take Amy to go to class in an ordinary school.”

Hearing the youth’s proposal, Bacon was surprised.

“With the miss’s present situation, even with the family’s teachers, they also have quite a headache with her, how could we even make her go to a regular school to study?”

“Mr. Bacon, I’m also very clear with Amy’s situation. But excessive protection isn’t good for her, do you want to make her study at home, until she’s grown up? You must know, even if she’s an ordinary child, growing up in such a closed environment would still be a very bad thing, let alone such a special child like Amy. By only letting her have contact with the outside world, would she be able to interact with more people, and live like an ordinary child, so as to let her grow up healthily.” Masashi said with a righteous look.

Bacon seriously thought for a moment, and began to feel that the youth’s remarks were indeed very reasonable, but....

“Mr. Lei Yin, I must admit that you’re right, but the young lady may have a difficult time to get along with other strangers.” Bacon spoke out his worries.

The youth thought for a moment, “For the next few days, I’ll try talking to her, and hopefully able to harbor thoughts of giving it a go.”

Bacon didn’t have any high hope hearing these words, because during infancy to maturity, the young lady had been checked to more than ten psychiatrists, if the problem could be solved this simply, then Mr. Meng Zhuoer wouldn’t have such headaches.

“I just received a call from Mr. Rolando, he said that the funeral for Mr. Adams will be held tomorrow morning, can I ask for Mr. Lei Yin to lead the young lady to attend the funeral at the appointed time. After all, Mr. Adams is still the young lady’s biological uncle, if the young lady doesn’t come it would possibly be not very good.” Bacon mentioned another matter.

“Good, I’ll lead Amy to go at the appointed time. Please rest assured.”

“Thank you, Mr. Lei Yin. I won’t hinder you from resting any longer, if there’s nothing else, I’ll have to excuse myself.” Bacon stood up.

“Good night, Mr. Bacon.”

“Good night. Mr. Lei Yin.” With that Bacon walked out of the hall.

At 11 pm, Masashi suddenly opened his eyes looking at the door, and after a while, the door gently opened. A small figure walked inside.

“Little kid, how come, you aren’t asleep yet?” The youth asked the figure.

“Lei....want to sleep with you.” The little girl holding a pillow went towards the youth’s bedside and whispered.

“Is it because Alice is not here, so you can’t sleep?”

“Yes.”

The youth thinking that, “come up then.”

The little girl was very happy and immediately climbed up the bed, happily bringing the pillow and spread it on the bed.

The youth looked at her and smiled, then also went sideways while lying on the bed.

When the teenager laid down, the little girl right away squeezed herself into his arms.

“When Amy has grown up, later must be in a room by herself, okay?” The teenager said while gently touching the back of her hair.

“Don’t want, Amy’s scared.” Amy shook her head.

The youth went silent for a moment, said: “Little kid, can I discuss something with you?”

“What happened?” Amy looked up at him.

“I can help you seal up some of your unhappy memory, and with this, you should be able to become slightly happier. But because these are your memories, I wanted to ask for your opinion.”

Seeing her look like she hadn't understood, Masashi said softly: “For example, when you saw that thing that happened to your mother.”

After finishing what he said, Amy shivered like a frightened rabbit, her whole body shrunk into the youth daring not to raise her head again.

“Don't be afraid. It's all right.” The youth hugged her and gently comforted her.

He didn't think that Amy's reaction would be this big.



## Chapter 85 - Another Funeral

---

Looking at the coffin which was gradually being covered by the soil, Rolando's mood was very complicated.

He is not a good younger brother, not even a good person. He, for the past few years, was the first Dai Fei family member who sold arms. In addition, he also did countless bad things. His name made the entire Dai Fei family into shame. But under his pressure, many people did not dare to speak out against him.

However, no matter what, this person, who is his third younger brother, has died, died in his own room.

Unable to shake off the emotional distress that revolved around Rolando, he began to miss Adams as a child. At that time, he was the most lovable one. Because their father was often away from home, the responsibility to take care of the three younger brothers naturally fell on his elder brother.

However, strictly speaking, the one who needed to be taken care of were only Adams and Murphy. Meng Zhuo'er and him were always the independent ones among them. Others have never needed to worry about the two of them.

Perhaps because their age difference is not that much, the childhood Adams was most intimate with him.

And now he is dead, and many people believe that was a good thing.

Rolando silently threw a white Lily inside the grave. Soon, the white flower was covered by the brown soil.

After the funeral, Murphy with a very complex set of eyes looked at the man who stood beside Amy, Lei Yin. Then, he followed the other people to leave the cemetery.

“Kid, you wait for me in the car, okay?” Masashi opened the door to the little girl and said.

“Em.” Amy obediently sat inside.

“I’ll be back soon.” Masashi turned on the radio and then closed the door.

He went to Meng Zhuo’er’s grave and looked at the beautiful woman who was silently staring at the tombstone.

After a while, the youth spoke one sentence: “If you are unwilling to go back, I will take good care of the kid.”

The woman shook her head, facing the tombstone and said: “I promised Mr. Meng Zhuo’er that I will take care of Amy. Although it began as a lie, now I consider that promise as real.”

“Although I was told to call you back, if you really don’t want to come back, I won’t force you. After all, a woman must get married

eventually.”

The woman was silent for a moment, and then gently said: “For years, I have done many things for Murphy, regardless of my willingness or unwillingness. Sometimes, I thought that Murphy didn’t really love me and only wanted my help. But every time, I don’t even want to think about it. For him, I have given up so many things. If the answer is no, I am afraid I might collapse.

But after that night, I have thought for a long time, and I thought a lot of things that was previously unthinkable to me. I discovered that I really am not sure whether or not Murphy truly loves me. To verify this, I did something foolish that I really thought was laughable.”

Alice Lynn turned to look at the youth, “Just this morning, I went to the law firm who handled to custody transfer. The custody is not transferred to Murphy, but to Mr. Rolando.”

Having heard this words, even the normally very calm youth can’t help but stunned.

“Why are you doing this?” Masashi looked at her.

“Because I want to confirm if Murphy will still accept me even after I complete this foolish thing.

Also, thank you for saving Bruneau.” Alice Lynn’s smile was peaceful.

The youth quietly watched the mixed-race beauty before him, after a while, he stretched out his right hand, “Later on, I have to trouble you with taking care of that kid.”

“Amy is a very obedient girl. She is no trouble at all.” Alice Lynn reached out to grip the youth’s hand.

“Want me to drive you back? I can still do part-time as your bodyguard. If that fellow dares to hit you, I would just castrate him.” The youth said with a smile.

“No need, although I am not sure if he loves me, I know him well enough. He is a gentleman and would not hit a woman. Moreover, I still want to accompany Mr. Meng Zuo’er to talk. Because I have deceived him, I want to plead for his forgiveness.” Alice Lynn turned around and quietly said as she stared at the tombstone.

“Very well, if you need something, feel free to call me anytime.”

“Thank you, Lei Yin.”

After returning to the car, the youth said to the little girl: “Don’t worry, Alice Lynn will be back soon.”

Amy suddenly seemed jubilant.

“Kid, if I ever lied to you, what would you do?” While helping the

little girl fasten her seat belt, the youth asked.

The little girl thought for a moment, and then said: “If it were Lei or Lynn, I would forgive you both.”

“Really? I feel very honored.” Masashi smiled and twisted her face.

The little girl laughed and wanted to reach out to hug him, but her move was restricted because of the seat belt.

“All right, stop playing. Kid, I ask you, the things that I told you last night, have you considered it?” Masashi held her small hand.

Last night, after being comforted by the youth, Amy slowly returned to normal. But she was still too afraid to listen about the matter again. Hearing the youth spoke about this, she unconsciously shivered.

Seeing this, the youth immediately undo her seat belt and took her in his arms.

After seemingly a long time, the girl began to slowly stop trembling. Then, after a while, she slowly lifted her head to look at the youth.

“Lei....you help me decide okay? Amy is afraid.” The little girl looked at him very much in tears.

“I think it would be better if you forget those unhappy things.” The youth quietly looked into her eyes.

“So...so long I listen to Lei. It’s okay.” Amy buried her head into his arms.

“Relax, everything will be okay.” The youth softly said this sentence in her ear.

—

“Rumi, what happen to you? You seem to lost your spirit recently.” The Kendo club manager Ma Fang sat next to the girl and asked.

“I am fine, senior sister, please don’t worry about me.”

“Really? Maybe I am just being oversensitive, but I seem to feel that recently, you are somewhat absent-minded.”

“That’s probably because I was too tired recently.” The girl said with a smile.

“Good then. You are now our Kendo Club trump card, be sure to take care of yourself. Otherwise, teacher Omura will scold me to death.” Ma Fang stretched out her tongue.

“You flatter me, senior sister. Excuse me, what day is it today?” Rumi asked.

“You little fool, you even forgot the day of the week. Today is Thursday. It seems you really are tired. After you go back, try to rest earlier.”

“I know, thank you for the concern, senior sister.”

‘Today is Thursday? It’s been more than half a month already.’ Rumi looked away, lost in thought.

“Rumi, Rumi!”

“What’s the matter, senior sister?” The girl suddenly looked at Ma Fang.

“Didn’t you hear that? Teacher Omura is looking for you.”

The girl turned her head and saw teacher Omura was really looking for her.

“Oh. Senior sister, I’ll go first.” Rumi immediately stood up and ran.

“Fool your Kendo sword.” Ma Fang shouted from behind.

But Rumi seemingly did not hear that and continued to run.

Sure enough, after teacher Omura talked to her, Rumi ran back to collect her Kendo sword.

‘This girl, is she really okay?’ Ma Fang was a bit concerned.



# Chapter 86 - Change

---

At 7:30 A.M., butler Bacon had a breakfast as usual.

The German man has been in the family service for more than twenty years. In the past twenty years, he was like a Swiss clock, managing the family affair in split second precision.

This Mansion was originally bought by Mr. Winslow Dai Fei as a vacation house, too bad, because of his busy work schedule, until his death, he's only been here three times.

Later on, Mr. Winslow gave this Mansion to his favorite son, Mr. Meng Zhuo'er.

When Bacon became the Mansion's Butler, he was only about 25 years old young man. In the blink of an eye, he was now a middle-aged man. In this twenty years of Mansion's work, he witnessed the step by step struggle of Mr. Meng Zhuo'er to become the head of the Dai Fei family.

Regarding this Master, who was eight years younger than him, he sincerely admires him.

When he was thinking about the past, a maid walked in.

“Mr. Bacon Miss Luo Diman is here.”

“Really? That’s great. Quickly invite her in.” Bacon suddenly exclaimed.

Not long after, a mixed-race woman entered the Hall.

“Good morning, Mr. Bacon.” Alice Lynn nodded her head and said hello to the German man.

“Good morning, Miss Luo Diman. I welcome your arrival.” Bacon said politely.

“You are too kind, is Miss Amy has woken up?”

Bacon looked at his watch, “It should be about now. May I ask, have you had breakfast yet? Would you like me to call for someone to help you prepare?”

“No need, thank you for your kindness, but I don’t have an appetite for now.”

“Are you unwell? Miss Luo Diman, your face doesn’t look good.” From the door, the German man found her face quite haggard.

“I am okay. Maybe I didn’t sleep very well last night.” Alice Lynn smiled.

“Please take care of your health, Miss Luo Diman. Do you want to drink a cup of tea?”

“Sorry to trouble you.” Alice Lynn nodded.

Around 8 o’clock, dressed in pajamas and walking around in slippers, Amy walked into the Hall.

Because the sofa chair was high and its back was facing her, she didn’t know that Alice Lynn has come back.

Amy rubbed her sleepy eyes and said to the German housekeeper: “Mr....Bacon, have you seen Lei?”

“Crash!” The cup in the mixed-race beauty’s hand fell to the ground.

Initially, her spirit was not too well to begin with, adding this unexpected shock, Alice Lynn finally lost her self-control.

By contrast, although he also has the same astounded face, the middle-aged German man was much more calm, he only spilled a bit of his black tea.

“Yeay, it’s Lynn. When did you get back?” Attracted by the sound of the falling cup, Amy finally saw her and threw herself at Alice Lynn.

Closely looking at Amy’s face, Alice Lynn felt like she was in a dream.

“Em, Amy, what did you call Mr. Bacon just now?” After managing to pull herself together, the mixed-race beauty bewilderedly asked.

The little girl confusedly looked at her, after a while she said: “Mr. Bacon is Mr. Bacon, I don’t understand what Lynn means.”

At that moment, the German man suddenly had the impulse to bend the knees and thanked the graciousness of the God. For so many years, this was the first time the little Lady called him by his name.

“Lynn, have you seen Lei?” Then, Amy asked that question again.

Alice Lynn can’t help but look at the excited housekeeper next to her.

“Miss, Mr. Lei Yin has gone jogging, he should be back soon. Do you want to eat breakfast?”

“Yes, thank you, Mr. Bacon. Lynn, we’ll eat together, okay?”

The mixed-race beauty can only nod and let herself be dragged by Amy to the kitchen table and sat down.

“Miss, please wait a moment, I will send someone to prepare the

breakfast.” Still in his excited state, the German man almost ran to the Hall.

“Lei Yin, can you tell me what happened to Amy?” When after taking a bath the youth in loose clothing seated on the sofa, Alice Lynn finally couldn’t bear but ask the question that she kept in her heart.

“After Mr. Bacon come I will answer your question in one go.” When talking, the teenager touched the head of the little girl who was sitting next to him.

Listening to this, Alice Lynn had to endure not to speak.

After a while, Bacon came back with hands holding the freshly prepared breakfast.

“Please enjoy, Mr. Lei Yin.”

“Thank you. If Mr. Bacon has no other important matter, can you sit down and talk?” The youth said to him.

“With my pleasure.” Bacon sat down on another chair.

“Kid, it seems your little friend haven’t eaten breakfast yet, why don’t you go and feed it? Otherwise, it may get angry.” The youth turned to the little girl and said.

“Oh, I almost forgot.” Amy immediately jumped down and ran out.

“Lei Yin, what do you mean by this little friend?” Alice Lynn somewhat confusedly asked.

“It’s just a puppy that we bought when I went out with that kid yesterday. Okay, since Mr. Bacon is also here, feel free to ask me anything.” The youth said as he began to eat his breakfast.

Although watching others having breakfast was a very rude thing to do, in order to look for the answer to the question in her heart, Alice Lynn can’t help but ask: “Answer me first, why would Amy become like this?”

“Before answering this question, let me ask you a question, Amy’s present condition, is it a good thing or a bad thing?” The youth said.

“I....I don’t know, I just felt it was too abrupt. I temporarily unable to accept it.”

“Mr. Bacon, what do you think?” The youth asked the German man.

“I think what happen to little Miss is a good thing, at least now she’s opened up a lot, moreover, it is clear that she’s now able to slightly accept other people.” After thinking for a moment, the German man said.

## Chapter 87 - Previous Place

---

“Since that’s the case, I’m going to answer your question. Amy turned out like this because I treated her with hypnosis.” The youth said to Alice.

“Hypnosis?” Alice stood up in amazement.

The youth looked at her and said quietly: “It’s just like I’ve told you before, the reason why she became an autistic child, was because she witnessed her mother’s suicide, so I gave her a deep hypnosis to let her forget the scene of her seeing the death of her mother. This is actually quite easy; any psychiatrists with deep experience with hypnosis can do it.

After having done this deep hypnosis, Amy still knows that her mother committed suicide, but doesn’t have any image seeing her commit suicide. Sometimes, seeing and knowing are two different things.”

“You unexpectedly know hypnosis?” Alice slowly sat down.

“Besides being born that exceeded an ordinary child, I have more things that I can do. This issue is not even worth mentioning about.”

The youth irritated the mixed-race beauty as he was looking as if he was looking down on her.

“But, Mr. Lei Yin, if I remember correctly, regardless of the depth of hypnosis, there would also be a time-limit. It would be difficult to guarantee that after a period of time the young lady wouldn’t think about it again.” The prudent German butler thought about it and said.

“This you have nothing to be worried about, the method of hypnosis is different from the methods that general psychiatrist uses, so long as the little kid doesn’t see a similar scene as her sealed up memory, she won’t remember it again. Also to be safe, you’d better pay attention and not let her come into contact with anything related to her mother’s suicide, if you can, it would be best to wait for her to become an adult and then let her go to see her mother. This is also the reason why I’ve asked you to have a conversation with me.”

The youth indeed has made the little girl go through a deep hypnosis, which was different from the general psychiatrists, in the hypnosis, he added his own strong spiritual force to make it successful.

Lei Yin after reincarnating had an internal force that exceeded that of an ordinary individual, although he practices until late at night every day, from his reincarnation until now, had only been about two years. Therefore, the present Lei Yin only has 20% of the skill he had when he was at his peak.

But even with this, the present Lei Yin would still find it difficult to find someone that could match him.

A master who had reached the peak realm and the physical



requirement weren't that high. What really made him invincible was his inherent spiritual cultivation.

That's why, after this special deep hypnosis, so long as she doesn't encounter the things stated before, Amy would basically never remember those horrible scenes again."

"Is it really possible to do this kind of thing right away?" Alice was a little skeptical.

"Of course, this much is simple, I have also already talked with Mr. Bacon, hoping to let the kid go to a normal school. With this you can pay attention to her condition, if you find that she's unlikely to adjust to strangers and excessively resists, then you should find the right time to do so. If you usually have time, you can take her out for a walk, and have contact with the outside environment, so that she can have time to adapt."

Alice found it hard to remember every word he said.

"Mr. Bacon, I'm grateful to have been taken care of, if nothing else happens, then, in the next days I'm going to go back and leave Switzerland." The youth said to the German man.

"What, you're leaving?" Alice looked at him in surprise.

The youth said with a shrug: "Even if you build a thousand-league and awn for it, good things would still come to an end, It's only a matter of time when."

Bacon and Alice were silent.

“Well, kid, have you feed it?” The youth faced towards the little girl holding a white puppy and asked.

“Lei, Little Lei has eaten a lot.” The little girl said with joy.

“Hey, I’ve said so many times, don’t call the dog Little Lei, makes my whole body uncomfortable each time I hear it.” The youth protested.

“Don’t want to, I like this name.” The little girl hugged the puppy into her arms.

“In that case, I have something better, how about calling the dog Lei Li.” The youth suddenly smirked.

“Lei Li?”

“Yes, the name sounds good, right? Later call it Lei Li, it’s decided.” The youth made an effort and slight patted the head of the puppy.

The puppy immediately called out.

“Look, it even likes the name.” The youth said with a smile.

“Okay, Lei Li behave well.” The little girl kissed the dog’s head.

At this time, somewhere in New York, a man suddenly sneezed for no reason.

“Weird, did I catch a cold?” The man muttered to himself.

“It seems you didn’t sleep a wink last night. Go get some sleep.” At noon, the youth sat beside the mixed-race beauty who was in a daze in the garden.

Alice glanced at him helplessly, “He had a huge temper, I haven’t seen him that angry. And finally, he threw me out. Tell me did I really make any mistake?”

“You can go back, go to his family or office. You can ask him, ask him to forgive you. If that doesn’t work, you can just kneel down and grasp his thigh and tell him how much you love him. Then tell him, if you lost him, you’ll die.” The youth said lightly.

“Lei Yin, you are very cruel sometimes. You bastard!” The mixed-race beauty tightly bit her lips while closely observing him.

“Didn’t you say you love him? Maybe if you do so, he might forgive you.” The youth continued.

“Enough, I beg you not to say anything else.” Alice burst into

tears.

“Cry, cry heartily.” The boy quietly walked up to her and stroked her brown hair.

Alice finally couldn't bear it anymore, lying her head on his shoulder to cry on....

---

Airport, a place of bidding good-bye. If there's an unfortunate air crash, it would possibly become the place that they've parted forever.

11:00 pm, a youth arrived at Zurich Airport Terminal.

He seemed like an Asian tourist, the only thing on him was a gift bag and no other luggage.

Half an hour away from his flight, the youth calmly sat on a chair and started to read today's newspaper.

Moments later, his cell phone rang.

“Hey, is this Alice?”

“You don't need to come over, I'm not fond the atmosphere of

bidding good-bye to a person.”

“I ‘ve also told the little kid, that I have a matter to do, so after some time, if she wants, I can come back. Hearing this should make her feel better. However, I’m not deceiving her, when I have a vacation I’ll certainly come back again to see her. When she wakes up, you tell her that I was in a hurry, so I needed to go first.”

“I would also like to thank Mr. Bacon for taking care of me.”

“Don’t say anything, I need to board the plane. Later, if something happens, give me a call on this phone.”

After hanging up, the youth walked towards a glass window, silently looking at the scenery outside.

# Chapter 88 - Goodbye

---

“Kid, what are you doing here?”

“Long time no see, how do you do? Hey, why don’t you speak?”

Seeing the young girl turned her head away, the youth was a bit bewildered.

“You’re Asami right? What’s wrong with her?”

A glanced at him but did not make any noise. Just followed behind the girl.

“Kazumi, Rumi, you guys go ahead, I want to see this kid.” With that, the youth ran forward a few steps.

“Rumi, don’t worry.” Kazumi gently patted her hand.

“Em.” The young girl nodded her head, but her face looked a bit lonesome.

Kazumi knew it would be useless to say anything now, so she held her hand and continued to move forward.

“Hey, kid, what happened?” The youth ran to the previous girl.

When she saw the young girl's face, he was stunned.

“Gennai you bastard!” With a face full of tears, the young girl glared at the youth and then suddenly threw herself into his arms.

Asami was holding her bag from the side and smiled at them.

“Hey, you this dead kid, dare to bite me?” The youth suddenly screamed and pushed the young girl away from his bosom.

Seeing the youth awkwardly rubbed his shoulder, the young girl couldn't help but smile.

“You have the nerve to smile?” The youth glared at her.

“Who told you to run away for half a month without telling me anything? This is your punishment.” The young girl charmingly said.

Hearing this, the youth felt wronged. He initially planned to go back straight away after a day in Nepal, who knew he would be dragged into a family feud. Although afterward, he told Kazumi about this, he actually forgot to tell this young girl.

“Just call it a tie. Here are the souvenirs for you two. The extra two are for your friends. Masashi pulled out four gifts wrapped in very beautiful packages from his bag. One for Aiko, and the other three for Asami.

“What is this thing?” Aiko never thought this heartless guy has actually bought a gift for her.

“You will know when you open it.”

Aiko ripped open the packaging paper only to see a little red box. She opened the box and found a very fine and exquisite ladies watch. It's not just the degree of sophistication but also its unique shaped bracelet.

“This is really for me?” Aiko never saw such exquisite and cute watch. Her stained with tears face immediately filled with a surprised smile.

“Do you like it?” Masashi said with a smile.

“Em.” The young girl can't wait anymore and wore the watch on her right hand. After wearing, she lovingly looked from left and right.

“Student Gennai, I can't accept this gift.” At this moment, the nearby Asami suddenly said.

“Asami, why won't you accept this?” Aiko looked at her somewhat confused.

“Because this gift was too expensive.”



She didn't know the exact price, but she knew this hand watch can't be bought below five digit number.

“Gennai, are these watches really expensive?” Aiko asked.

Masashi enjoyed watching this girl called Asami, “Don't worry, I bought these with my money. Though these things are a bit expensive to buy in Tokyo, in their origin country Switzerland, the price is actually very ordinary.

“What, are you saying you went missing for half a month to go to Switzerland?” Aiko looked at him in surprised.

Masashi smiled, “What's with this missing thing, don't say such a nasty word ok? However, I did go to Switzerland, just landed yesterday.”

“What are you doing in Switzerland? Don't tell me you went on vacation there.” Aiko has no doubt about his words that he went to Switzerland, but she was curious about what he was doing there.

“Kid, you're really smart. I went there as a tourist.” Masashi said with a smile.

“Who's going to believe you, quickly talk, what exactly are doing there?” Because of dissatisfaction with his answer, the young girl swung her arms in front of him, acting like a spoiled kid.

“Nosy kid, quickly walks, after taking you back, I have to go home for dinner.” Just like in the Switzerland when he was preoccupied with something he likes to pinch the little girl’s face, Masashi casually pinched the young girl’s face.

“Annoying guy!” Aiko blushed, but she still clung her two hands on the youth’s arm.

Watching the laughter of the two people, and looking at the fine watch on her hand, Asami quietly followed up.

Asami’s house was relatively near, so Masashi and Aiko took her back home first.

“We’re here, kid, I’m going home now.” In front of Aiko’s apartment, Masashi said his goodbye.

“Hey, do you want to come in and sit down for a minute?” The young girl looked at him with a bit sad face.

“No thank you, I need to get home for dinner. Moreover, you don’t need to come looking for me at school anymore, if you have something to say, just give me a call.”

“Then....when will you have the time to come pick me up after school?” The young girl hesitated for a moment and said.

“What’s wrong, something is bothering you?” Masashi raised his eyebrows.

“No, forget it, I’m going in now.” With that, Aiko, a bit angry, went inside.

‘What’s wrong with this kid? I always thought she’s acting strange today. Forget, I’ll go and check on her tomorrow, maybe someone did give her some trouble.’ Masashi thought while walking.

When he just walked a few steps, suddenly, a light blue compact car came at his direction.

When the car was beside the youth, the driver suddenly slammed the brake.

Just when the youth believed he would bump into some trouble, he suddenly revealed a mistaken expression.

He saw, walking down from that light blue compact car, a young woman in white dress; A woman who turned other people’s heads when she walks with 100% success rate.

“Are you Masashi?” The young woman closely looked at the youth, failing to hide the surprise in her eyes.

“Teacher Naoko?” The youth never thought after being separated for almost a year he would see this beautiful woman again.

## Chapter 89 - Phone Number

---

In the eyes of artists and writers, girls and women are two entirely different concepts. Girls represents the youth, sharp, nimble and resourceful as well as green. But Women are mature, stylish, and synonymous with seduction.

The person in front of the youth was undoubtedly woman among women.

In the school, no one questioned the moral character of teacher Naoko. Beautiful as a flower, modest, humble, and courteous, was the best portrayal of her. She treated anyone with politeness but regarding to any men who continually tried to get close to her, she maintained a safe distance without apparent indifference. But even so, she sometimes inadvertently revealed her mature feminine character and style, making many male teachers and students almost unable to restrain themselves.

It's been a year, she looked more beautiful and sophisticated. A faint fragrance floated from her body and into the youth's nose, causing the youth's state of mind, as if a river, surged out a strange ripple.

While the youth observed her, teacher Naoko was also watching the youth.

After a year, he looked a lot taller, now she was only as tall as his earlobe. A year ago, that young and inexperienced face was now brimmed with a kind of bright luster. On his face, she could not

find any of those typical teen acne. Compared to the past, those deep and fantastic pair of eyes were now seemingly able to suck the human soul. The slender and fit body under those eyes, together with his whole body, exuded a special quality that words can not describe.

This youth was still that ordinary youth, perhaps in the crowd, no one will notice him. But when someone accidentally put their eyes on him, they could not move away from him.

Gradually full like a new moon. This was the only words teacher Naoko can think of.

“Teacher Naoko, when did you get back?” After that moment of surprise in the beginning, the youth asked.

“I just came back this morning. My sister might not know that I’m back. Fancy seeing you here, we haven’t seen for a while, Masashi.” The beautiful teacher looked a bit excited.

“It is almost a year now, how have teacher recently been?”

“Um. Have you eaten yet? If you haven’t then I invite you to eat, what do you think?” Teacher Naoko looked at him and said.

“No need, my food is already prepared at home, I’m going to eat there. Thank you for the offer teacher Naoko.”

Hearing what the youth said, teacher Naoko looked a bit

disappointed.

“If teacher has some free time, you can call me on my phone, at that time we can slowly chat again.” Seeing her looked of disappointment, Masashi added this sentence.

“But I don’t have your phone number.”

“Your phone number has not changed, right? If it has not changed, I will call your phone.” Masashi said and took out his mobile phone.

“Do you remember my phone number?”

“Of course, I remember.” Masashi casually said something. In any case, her phone number was still on his phone, so he didn’t have to remember anything.

“My phone number has not changed.” Having heard these words, teacher Naoko suddenly looked very cheerful.

“Goodbye, teacher Naoko.” After an exchange of phone numbers, Masashi said goodbye to her.

“Masashi.” Teacher Naoko suddenly called him.

“What happened?”

“I am no longer your teacher, if you do not mind, you can just call me Naoko?” After some hesitation, teacher Naoko softly said.

Masashi was a bit surprised but quickly nodded.

“Naoko, welcome back.” The youth said with a smile.

At that moment, Naoko smiled like a blooming flower.

—

“Senior, please advise.” In the wooden floor and spacious basement, Rumi, in Kendo suit and a helmet, bowed toward Masashi.

“Begin.” On the opposite of her, Masashi dismissively said in a casual manner.

Without further ado, this Kendo girl quickly stepped forward with hands holding a bamboo sword and made a sword strike toward Masashi....

Twenty minutes later, Masashi pulled the already dripping with sweat Rumi to the side.

“Kid, not bad, you made a great progress.” Masashi took her helmet off and said with a smile. Seeing his bright and smiling face, the Kendo girl suddenly filled with a grievance. Soon, this

emotional grievance turned into a flood of impulse. Finally, she could no longer hold anymore and quickly clung to the youth's neck then burst into tears.

Adding to this, within one day, Masashi had been amazed for the third times.

The youth was dreadfully puzzled by her action and had to gently pat her back to appease.

After a long time, the girl finally stopped crying, but her body still occasionally twitched.

“Kid, what happened? Tell senior about it.” Masashi held the had been crying little girl and sat leaning against the wall.

“Senior, I miss you....” After saying this, the girl clung to his neck again.

“Little fool, I am already back am I not?” Masashi smiled.

Rumi lifted up her stained with tears face and looked at him, “Senior, I....” Having said this, she started to speak but hesitated.

“What happened?”

“I....I am a bit hungry.” Immediately after saying this, the girl quickly scolded herself.



“Got to hand it to you, after making this serious atmosphere, I thought there was something serious. Then let’s go, mom and Kazumi should’ve prepared the dinner by now.” Masashi helped her get up.

The girl nodded her head, then continued to look at him in silence, as if he would suddenly disappear.

“Right, do you like the souvenir that I bought for you?” At the stairs, Masashi pointed at the necklace that was hanging on her neck.

“Yes, very much. I will take good care of it.”

“Fool, what’s with taking good care, it’s just a small gift.”

Rumi gently shook her head and tightly grasped the head of the necklace with her thumb and index finger.

—

At 9 o’clock in the morning, Chang’an was having a regular meeting with his subordinates.

Although this middle-aged man usually cherished his words like gold, when he need to talk he will talk. But the subordinates always startled by this consistent impression of their boss.

At every meeting, he always let other people to express their view first, until the meeting concluded when he would simply say a few words. But those words were the final decision which can't be rejected by anybody.

This time, when it was halfway through the session, Chang'an, with his usual patience, casually listened to the manager's current performance report. Suddenly, his cell-phone vibrated.

Looking at the caller-id, Chan'an said to the man: "Sorry, I have something to do. You can continue the meeting. Miss Guan, I will wait for you to put the meeting's content on my table." He turned his head to the side toward his secretary, who was responsible for the meeting's record.

"I know, Mr. Shen." The female secretary nodded.

"Everybody, excuse me." With that, he walked out of the meeting room.

The other people can't help but look at each other. This was the first time their boss left in the middle of a meeting.

Some people began to speculate about the identity of the caller, who unexpectedly received such a considerable attention from their boss.

After returning to his office, Chang'an answered the phone.

“Little Rei, what happened?” He knew if something important hadn’t happened, Reili wouldn’t call him at this time.

“Chan’an, those guys attacked our men again.” Reili’s tone seemed a bit weird on the phone.

“At what time?” Chang’an softly gasped.

“Today around four o’clock in the morning, they attacked our bases which were previously had been attacked by them, the casualties are even more greater than the last time.” Reili’s voice was as cold as ice.

Chang’an knew why he would be so angry like this.

To openly attack the same place twice, which was a blatant provocation, indicated the opposite party did not put them in their eyes.

“Did you inform the master?”

“Not yet.”

“You wait for me at the old place. I’ll be right there.”

“Understood.”

# Chapter 90 - Coffee

---

When Masashi received a phone call, he was a little surprised.

Arriving at the agreed place, going inside he looked around and saw Naoko-sensei with a rather handsome young man sitting at a coffee table having a conversation with her.

Masashi had seen this young man once in the past, he was Aiko's schoolmate's, the boy named Yusuke's cousin, Hinatsu Junichiro.

Although Naoko-sensei was talking with Junichiro, her eyes were actually looking at the coffee shop door, intentionally or not. So, when Masashi came inside, she immediately noticed him.

“I'm sorry. Hinatsu-san, the person who I've invited, has already come, I'll go first.” She then picked up her bag immediately running up to Masashi.

Seeing Naoko leave together with a youth that seemed a little familiar, Hinatsu choked a little with rage.

In addition to this time, he didn't know how many times this woman had rejected him.

In the eyes of outsiders, Hinatsu Junichiro was young, handsome and rich, he was an outstanding man in the eyes of most female, in this point, he himself couldn't deny it.

Regarding his grandiose appearance, it was quite different from the second generation born people, he gave people the impression that he was always so polite and prudent, which was also the reason why several women have a very good first impression of him.

Just a year ago, by chance, he met this woman named Naoko.

After seeing her for the first time, he was immediately attracted to her beautiful appearance causing his kidney to go online ascending ever wildly; he truly was attracted to this devil's figure.

Just like the sons of all rich men, he also liked beautiful woman very much. By this condition, he was unable to count how many woman he had already played with.

However, he has actually never seen any woman that made men impulsive like her.

Knowing that she went to Nagoya, he thought that it was all right to drive frequently looking for her. But even with his passionate way of pursuit, this woman actually didn't budge.

At first, he thought that she was doing it intentionally and constraining herself, but after being repeatedly rejected, he discovered that this woman didn't actually have any interest in him.

For love killers like him, this was an absolute humiliation.

He began to think that she already had a boyfriend, so he even had asked people to investigate her. But the finding only left him frustrated.

Was she a lesbian? But he soon overthrew this conclusion because the results of the investigation didn't mention whether she was associated with a male or female.

And seeing the boy just now, it now became more impossible.

On the other hand, the harder it was to get the woman, the more interested he became in them. That's why he had continued pursuing her for nearly a year. For him, this was an unprecedented event.

Looking at the wonderful bodied woman wearing a swaying white skirt, gradually disappear, Junichiro unconsciously swallowed his saliva. Looking around, he found that inside the restaurant, many men were watching Naoko leave.

Anyway, he had to make sure to get this woman. Junichiro clenched his fists.

"Good riddance that guy." Going outside, Naoko-sensei stuck out her tongue at Masashi.

"You won't be able to get rid of your suitors without calling me to come, right?" Masashi said with a little headache.

“I had nothing to do with him, it just simply happened like that, so don’t misunderstand.” She looked very nervous.

“You can see, that my job is now done, what do you want to do, go home?” Masashi looked at the time on his phone showing that it was only 3 pm.

“Of course not. It’s a rare Sunday. Moreover, the weather is good, let’s go around.”

Looking at her face filled with hope, Masashi nodded.

“Then let’s go quickly, I was in the Harajuku department store and saw a fancy dress, let’s go there now.” Then, Naoko-sensei couldn’t wait and pulled Masashi’s hand, walking at the front.

“Hey, could it be you want to walk there?” Masashi was almost like a pet being pulled away.

“Of course not, silly.” He didn’t know whether it was because the weather was hot, but Naoko-sensei’s face was bright red.

In the Shibuya district not far from the women’s clothing department store in the VIVRE Shopping Mall, the youth sat on the guest chair in the store while yawning non-stop.

Wasn’t that fellow already settled? Why come here and after

choosing for quite a while only to choose two items? At first, he walked around with her, but after half an hour, he couldn't hold on, and quickly found a place to sit down.

“Masashi, I've changed. Come and help me take a look.” The youth was sitting down bored when a Naoko-sensei wearing a short lavender dress walked out of the changing room in front of him.

Seeing that the girl had changed into a new clothing, Masashi at present couldn't help but reveal a surprised look and have a breathtaking feeling.

Masashi sighed at the potential of a woman, so long as they changed clothes or hairstyle, it would produce results that make it seem like they're a different person.

Usually dressed in a bit of a gentle and elegant office clothes, but the current Naoko-sensei was different, like this she could make most men she meets to indulge in fantasy.

Silk veil skirt attached to her clothes in a roundabout way making one's heart beat, and in the light, it would give a kind of slightly transparent but hazy feeling. Her pair of smooth jade-like slender legs can be seen under her short skirt. It was a pair of delicate white, making people unable to bear and want to touch it with their hands appreciatively.

This woman really was a stunner, even with Lei Yin's extensive training, he still found that his heart was beating unexpectedly fast



jumping up several times.

He has rarely seen a woman with such a perfect body, if she walked around dressed like this, it would be hard to imagine how many men would turn into a wolf.

“Masashi, does this dress look good?” Naoko-sensei blushed and asked him.

The youth watched her quietly, and suddenly walked up touching her hair. Immediately, her long supple hair draped behind her back, and out of thin air added some obsequiousness.

Seeing the teenager near, she suddenly felt stiff not daring to move, it seems like she was subconsciously looking forward to what happens next. But discovering that he only untied her hair lace, she suddenly felt a kind of sense of loss.

“This is even more beautiful.” The youth said with a smile.

“Thanks!” Naoko-sensei lowered her head, and with a barely audible voice, said something softly.

Unknowingly, it seems that between the two was filled with an ambiguous, charming, but exotic atmosphere.

Looking at the flowery and glamorous woman together with the unusual youth, the people around also had a face dyed in red.

Coming out of the department store, Naoko-sensei suggested to go sit down at a café, to this proposal Masashi lifted his foot in approval.

Walking not far, they arrived at a quite westernized coffee shop.

Because it was in the afternoon, the guests inside were not many. Masashi wanted to look for a spot near the window, but Naoko-sensei actually pulled him to a quite lonesome and quiet corner.

“Masashi, what do you want to drink? Don’t tell me that you want cola.” Naoko-sensei said with a smile.

“A cup of Cappuccino.”

“Oh, it seems that you also understand much.” Naoko-sensei was a bit surprised.

“This is nothing, remember I told you about the song Love Me Tender that my friend like? She very much liked coffee, I also knew her after drinking, but before that, I only drank tea.” Masashi said dismissively.

Naoko-sensei noticed that he said ‘she’ instead of ‘he’, but didn’t pursue the matter.

“I’ll trouble you with two cups of cappuccino,” Naoko-sensei said

to the waiter.

“Yes, please wait.” The waiter looked at her, blushing, quickly lowering his head after looking.

Masashi noticed that the waiter walked away in several steps, but also secretly looked back glancing at Naoko-sensei. Masashi smiled slightly.

And soon, he brought the coffee. Naoko-sensei didn't fill it with sugar but gently stirred the coffee with a spoon.

“Masashi you...what do you think about woman older than you?” After a while, Naoko-sensei suddenly asked making Masashi bewildered.

“Sorry, I couldn't quite understand what you mean.” Masashi looked up at her.

“I...I meant, you,...would you accept a woman who is older than you in age?” Naoko-sensei lowered her head as she spoke.

“In fact, it doesn't matter if the girl was a beautiful woman like you, I believe that all men would be happy.” Seeing that she seemed bothered by her feelings, Masashi had a headache, he was most afraid in providing advice on matters such as this.

“Is that true?” Naoko-sensei's head snapped up.

“Of course, with regards to you, I believe that no one would reject. Don’t worry.” This was already the limit of what Masashi could say.

“Then...you...willing to....accept me?” Naoko-sensei’s face was as red as blood but was also overwhelmingly nervous while she watched him..

“Bang” The coffee cup on Masashi’s hand fell on the table....

# Chapter 91 - Confession

---

When the waiter brought a new cup of coffee, Masashi dared not to drink again. He looked across the table at teacher Naoko who had silently hung her head

“Em, could you repeat that sentence? I might have heard it wrong.” After a while, Masashi a bit awkwardly said some words.

After what seemed like a long time, Naoko slowly raised her head and looked at him, then faintly said: “I am sorry, I have scared you. I....excuse me.” With that, she stood up in a hurry to leave.

When passing him, the youth almost instinctively grabbed her hand.

Suddenly, he felt like a drop of liquid fell on the back of his hand, looking up, he can't help but stunned.

“Please....let me go...okay?” With eyes filled with tears, teacher Naoko tried to cover her face with her hand while the other hand struggled to get away from the youth's firm grip.

“Naoko, would you please sit down?” After taking a deep breath, the youth sincerely said.

After a while, teacher Naoko finally stopped struggling, then looked at him with an incomparably complex look and slowly sat at her original seat.

“If, I mean if, if I am not mistaken, the meaning of your words is, you like....em, have a certain degree of favorable impression toward me, am I right?” Masashi still not used to say those words.

Teacher Naoko looked at him in the eye, then with full of sadness but firm tone said: “Masashi, I....like you.

If these words create difficulty for you, I am sorry. I won't bother you anymore. I....I want to go back, please don't block me.” Then, she wanted to leave.

The youth didn't let her stand up. Instead, he grabbed her hand. Then he turned it over to expose her wrists and put two fingers on top of her veins or arteries to check her pulse.

Looking at the youth who did not say a word even after a long time, teacher Naoko gently sighed. She did not try to shake off his hand, just quietly watching him.

“How much time?” After a while, the youth said a sentence.

Teacher Naoko did not react for a time, just looking at him with confused eyes.

“I mean your heart's problem.” The youth looked at her.

“You....how did you know?” Teacher Naoko was very surprised.

The youth sighed, “You probably have some level of goodwill toward me, but with your character, you would not take the initiative to say those things toward a high school student like me. Only a person whose days are numbered would be eager to do such a thing. Am I right Naoko?”

After listening to Masashi, teacher Naoko’s face went white, and her whole body felt increasingly cold.

Suddenly, she felt her right hand tightened, looking up she saw the youth had wrapped her hand tightly in his hands.

“I won’t let anything happen to you.” The youth gently said some words.

This sentence seemed like a spell, teacher Naoko suddenly felt the chill flew away from her and, all of a sudden a warm feeling passed through his clasping hands and into her heart. At that moment, she knew, crystal-clear, how badly her attachment toward this youth is.

“Just a month ago, because of a sudden burst of angina, I was sent to the hospital. According to the doctor’s diagnosis, there’s a sign that my heart disease started to get worse. I forgot to tell you, I have a congenital heart disease, it belongs to the family of hereditary disease. My grandmother, at 26 years of age, died because of this illness. The doctor told me that if it continues to deteriorate, I might have a sudden death.

In that incidence, I really thought I would die. Fortunately, I survived that period. During that time in the hospital, I thought about a lot of things. But most of those thoughts was about you, do you know why I suddenly resigned from my teaching job to go to Nagoya?" Teacher Naoko looked at him with eyes as soft as the water.

"Is it because of me?" Seeing the look in her eyes, even an idiot would know that this matter was tied to themselves.

"Yes, before this you were my student, and I am six years older than you. I feared that if I continue to be in contact with you, one day I wouldn't be able to bear it. So, in order to suppress your feelings, I went to Nagoya."

"Actually, I am not worthy to be treated like this by you." After silent for a moment, the youth quietly said.

Teacher Naoko's free hand firmly grasped the youth's hands, "No, for you, everything is worth it. After living in the hospital for half a month, I finally figured it out. I don't really care if I were to die tomorrow. But I do not want to die with regret, and that regret is you. I won't ask you anything, I just want to stay by your side. Quietly stay by your side. It would be enough as long as I can quietly look at you.

Are....you willing to accept a woman like me who could die at any time?" Her tone was gentle as a summer wind.

"Please, let me stay by your side, okay?" At the same time, an



equally soft voice sounded in his ears, a refined and gentle face of a woman seemed to appear before his eyes once again.

In that instant, the youth had a feeling of being struck by lightning.

Teacher Naoko's heart was beating fast, nervously looking at the youth, who was in contemplation mode.

If his answer is negative, she did not know if she had the strength to get out of this coffee shop.

Will, he accept me?

—

“Aiko, such a rare Sunday, why don't you call that fellow Gennai to go out together?” Asami said with a smile.

“Why all of a sudden mention his name, hateful.” Aiko charmingly said.

“What's wrong, did you have a fight with him?” Ryoko interrupted to ask.

“No, you are all annoying.” Aiko went to the other side of the shelf to choose clothes.

The two curious girls would certainly not let her go, they immediately pulled the silent Ai to stand by Aiko's side.

“Oh, I get it, it must be because that guy Gennai put an excessive request to our lovable Aiko, that's why you are so angry.” Ryoko showed a strange smile.

“What did you say?” Aiko knitted her brows.

“For example, he asked you to go to the hotel with him, and so on. Am I right?” Ryoko smiled and said.

“Crazy, that's not it.” Aiko suddenly blushed.

“Is it true? That guy Gennai really made such a request?” Seeing her reaction Asami couldn't help but be a bit skeptical.

Ai was looking at Aiko with a complex look.

“No, do you guys really believe that blockhead able to do such a thing?” At this point, Aiko couldn't help but get angrier. Someone else's boyfriend, because of this hotel thing, would quarrel with their girlfriend. But him? She had obviously given him the opportunity to go into her apartment, but he actually did not cherish it. Although she didn't mean to invite him to do that kind of thing, at least there was a chance to promote their feelings to each other; Really hateful guy. Thinking of this, Aiko almost tore the clothes in her hands into shreds.

## Chapter 92 - Nuisance

---

“Impossible, there’s actually such a person? Could it be that he was giving a hint, but you haven’t noticed?” Ryoko couldn’t believe it. Aiko was high class, but there was actually a boy who could resist her?

“You’re very irritating; I want to try the clothes.” With that, Aiko picked up the dress conveniently entering the changing room.

“Asami, looking at her reaction it’s probably true. You talk, whether or not Gennai that fellow has an unmentionable disease?” Ryoko said a little baffled.

“Really you, you’re a girl, but you unexpectedly dare to talk about this kind of thing. Really don’t know who would dare take you as their wife.” Asami was both angry and amused.

“What? Anyway, a person like that doesn’t exist here. However, I still find it very odd, why that Gennai person doesn’t have any impression of Aiko. Looking at his ordinary appearance, he doesn’t seem to be stupid.”

“That fellow is different from ordinary male students, did you forget? He was the one that saved Aiko that night, and no matter what we say, he wasn’t willing to sleep alone with Aiko inside a room. If he requested that kind of thing to Aiko, I instead find it strange.” Asami said.

“I understand, in conclusion, that fellow is indeed a genuine odd

person.” Ryoko nodded like a pro.

“I agree,” Asami said.

“Little Ai?” Ryoko turns towards the nearby Ai and asked.

“I...I think that he’s a good person.” Ai was a bit off guard.

“Good person? Ah, you do speak some truth.” Ryoko was holding appreciatively the fine watch she got.

“You just said that he was a wack, but seeing the person’s gift, you immediately changed your impression of him.” Asami gritted her teeth and glared at her.

“Asami, you always scold me, just see how I learned from you.” Then Ryoko rushed over to her.

Asami’s fatal weakness was that she was ticklish, so it has become Aiko and Ryoko’s fearful method to deal with her. At this moment seeing the raging fury of the girl, Asami immediately ran away. Ryoko would certainly not let her off, and hurriedly pursued her. Suddenly, a sound of a young girl laughing reverberated in the changing area, causing the curious gazes of many people.

Looking at the disturbance that the two created, Ai smiled, and immediately looked at the watch on her wrist that the youth gave her, and was lost in thought.

In the restaurant reverberated with light music, the four young girls were sitting together having a drink and was talking with ease.

“Aiko, what a coincidence, I didn’t expect to see you here.” A boy wearing gold spectacles came over to them. Behind him, there was a tall guy with hair dyed blond.

“Ikeda you’re quite clever.” Aiko looked at him and said something.

“Since it’s such a rare meeting, let’s go see a movie together, then afterward have dinner, of course, you can also bring your friends together,” Ikeda said with a smile.

“I’m sorry, I have to go home for dinner. Thank You.”

“Aiko, don’t do this, let’s go together, I guarantee you’ll have fun,” Ikeda said as he put his left hand on her shoulder.

“This is a public place, and you should be a little respectful. Asami, let’s go.” Aiko very angrily pushed away his hand and stood up.

The other three girls also stood up and left.

Ikeda felt that he had loss face and was very angry, viciously

looking at the leaving Aiko.

After leaving the restaurant, Ryoko was a little worried and said: “Aiko, you don’t have a problem for now, but Ikeda’s a very vengeful guy, the last time a boy offended him, he was beaten and was sent to the hospital.”

“Humph! I’m not afraid of him.” Aiko curled her lips and said.

“Anyway, it would be best if you be careful,” Ryoko said.

Seeing the nearby Asami that seems like she was thinking about the matter, she patted her should and said: “Asami, are you also worried about this matter?”

Asami nods, “You must be careful with that Ikeda fellow. But there’s one thing I can’t understand.”

“What’s that?” Ryoko asked.

“Do you remember Genai-san ruthlessly beat Ikeda and his men?”

“I certainly remember that. I can’t believe that Gennai-san was actually quite fierce. My god, defeating seven people in a fight. I also thought that I was in a movie.” Ryoko stuck out her tongue.

“The problem here is that Ikeda with his personality, would

afterward definitely find revenge on Gennai-san. But so many days have already passed, but there's still no news. There were chances when Gennai-san came to pick up Aiko after school, it seems that Ikeda and his men are afraid of coming near. You say, isn't it strange?" Asami said.

"Listening to what you said that is probably true. What means did Gennai-san actually use to make Ikeda not want to get revenge on him? Do you know Aiko?" Ryoko asked.

The other two girls also looked at her.

"I don't know. That guy is always shrouded in mystery, just like this time, he suddenly went to Switzerland for half a month, I simply don't know anything." At this point, Aiko couldn't help but get angry.

Asami lowered her head and thought for a moment, and then she said: "We seem to understand this man Gennai-san too little, although we all know that his mother is an ordinary office worker, in addition to having a younger sister, we actually know very little of him. Aiko, do you also have this feeling?"

Hearing Asami's words, Aiko couldn't help but think about that horrible night, the scene of Masashi overthrew Mito Toyokawa to save her came out, in the school because of a few words, the scene of him beating up Ikeda and his men happened, and seemed like his body was covered with smoke making people unable to see through his mystical temperament. All these made Aiko fall into deep confusion.

“Ami, what should I do?” Aiko looked at Asami.

Seeing the helpless Aiko, Asami sighed in her heart, “I’ll give you a suggestion, don’t go ask him anything. One day when he’s willing to tell you, that means you’ve entered into his heart.”

“I know,” Aiko says profoundly.

—

“You... want to come and sit down?” At the apartment door, Naoko-sensei flushed and said.

“No, I want to go home for dinner. If you’re looking for someone to talk to or something, then remember to call me.” The youth said.

“Ah.” Naoko-sensei gently nodded.

“Your body just recovered, don’t stay up late, go to bed before 10 o’clock and must rest, understand?”

“I know.” Naoko-sensei’s voice was as gentle as water, silky obedience.

Hearing the teenager’s slightly commanding tone, she not only didn’t contravene, but also joyful in her heart. A kind of feeling



that was sweeter than honey filled her entire body and mind.

“Then I’ll go first. You go in now.” Then the youth turned around to leave.

Suddenly, an uncontrollable urge appeared on Naoko-sensei’s heart, she didn’t react for a moment, and then hugged the teenager’s thin waist.

“Lei!” She summoned her urge to gently call out the youth’s name, which she could only say when nobody’s around. Regarding this name, she was very fond of it

“what happened?” The teenager smiled at the beautiful person at his bosom.

“Please hug me?” Naoko-sensei looked at him like a child.

“Fool.” The teenager held her, a faint delicate fragrance exudes along with a pleasantly warm tender body was felt.

At this moment, Naoko-sensei thought that even it was fine even if she died at this very moment.

# Chapter 93 - Moonlight

---

A Wei, is what I'm doing right?

Late at night, a man sitting on the rooftop, a teenager was looking at the heavenly moonlight spellbound, at his side were a few empty beer cans.

He couldn't help but think of the scene in the coffee shop today.

–Flashback–

After a long reflection, the youth looked at Naoko-sensei.

“Naoko, as I said before, there's basically no man who can resist a beautiful woman like you, I am a normal man, for your request, if there's no heart, then it's absolutely self-deception.

I admit that you have a considerable degree of goodwill, otherwise I wouldn't be so concerned about you. A long time ago, there was a woman who told me the same thing, but later she died. She died, but I didn't even go to her funeral, however on several occasion in the middle of the night, I woke up and found out that she was actually been living in my heart.

Compared with you, my feelings for you may not even one-tenth of all. Do you really want to stay with a man's side whose heart is filled with another woman?”

Looking at the teenager's clear eyes, Naoko-sensei burst into laughter, "I am willing."

"You really are silly; with your circumstances, you can find a better man." Said the boy a little reluctant.

"Nobody, except for you, I think I can't accept other people. I don't intend to take her place, but I'll make up and reach you with my feelings." Naoko-sensei gently stroked the youth's face.

"If that's the case, it's up to you." The youth found that her hand felt very comfortable while touching his face, so he didn't stop her.

"Masashi, I am really happy." Again tears fell from her eyes.

"Actually, I have another name, if no one's around, you can call me Lei Yin." The youth gently wiped the tears from her face.

"Lei Yin? I really like the name." Naoko-sensei smiled while tears were hanging on her face.

"Come on, I'll send you back."

"Ah." Naoko-sensei tenderly complied.

–Flashback ends–

The youth's heart was thumping fast, at this time, he suddenly remembered a few words in a book: When you see the girl you like, you'll know her position in you with your heart.

“Brother, what are you doing here?” A voice pulled back Masashi from his thoughts.

“It's so late Why aren't you asleep yet?” Masashi said to the figure.

“Aren't you the same. What up with you, do you have a matter on your mind?” Kazumi in pajamas came towards him.

“I'm an old man, so I'll have many concerns, just looking at the moon tonight is pretty nice, just came out to appreciate the moon's beauty nothing more.”

“Deceiver, but even if you don't want to talk about it, I've already gotten used to your quirky personality anyway,” Kazumi smiled and leaned on his shoulder.

“What character of mine is odd?” Masashi managed to knock her head.

“Still what you say is odd, you speak as if there's a boy in school that resembles such a person as you.”

“Who would want to be like those little demons?” Masashi yawned.

“Brother, it seems like we haven’t had this kind of chat together for quite a long time,” Kazumi said, a little fondly remembering the past.

“It’s obvious that you dislike my pesky and unexpected yap that’s all,” Masashi said with a smile.

“You even dare say that. You always quietly away, and often go for half a month, and didn’t even tell us.” Kazumi annoyingly pinched his arm.

“Next time prior to my departure I’ll notify you alright. Ah, do you want my venerable life?” Masashi cried out.

Seeing that he didn’t respond to her pinch, Kazumi bit him. Hearing him call out in pain, she couldn’t help but laugh.

“Why do you kids always like to bite people.” Masashi bitterly said as he rubbed the place he was bitten at.

“So, there are other people biting you too? Who is it?” Worthy of being born to go to a first-rate school, hearing and even immediately understanding what he meant.

“Hey, aren’t you too sensitive?”

“Well, I know, it must be that Naoko-sensei’s sister. Brother, do

you honestly tell me that you don't like that girl?" Kazumi stared at his face.

"I refuse to answer such silly questions." Masashi stood up to go.

"No, you must answer." Kazumi fiercely pulled his clothes.

Masashi didn't understand why she was so persistent on this issue, having no choice but to talk: "I'll say it the last time, I'm not interested in that kid. I'm don't want those guys to say that I'm an old cow eating a young grass, alright? Really you little demons, thinking of love all the time, to these kinds of talks, can't you be reserved a little bit?"

"Brother, you can't fool me." Kazumi frowned. If what he said is true, then Rumi should have a chance.

"Go back to sleep, it's very late." Masashi no longer talks to her, and simply went downstairs.

"Hateful, wait for me." Kazumi runs and grasped his arm while going downstairs together.

"Oh, that's right, Brother, do you know the thing about that transfer student Nagasaki's house caught on fire a few days ago?" Kazumi walked side by side and asked.

"I've heard in school."

“It seems like it really is retribution. I heard from a schoolmate saying that his family doesn’t know the reason, but on midnight it just suddenly caught on fire. Moreover, the fire was very fierce, burning many places right away. When the firefighters arrived at the scene, the entire house had been mostly burnt down.” Kazumi said with a little anger.

“Oh, that serious? Is there no one injured?”

“I heard that it seems nobody was injured in the fire, everyone escaped in the house of Nagasaki escaped. He really has good luck.” Kazumi continued to say.

“It seems like his luck is indeed good.”

Without looking at Kazumi, in the darkness, the corners of the youth’s mouth gently twitched.

—

About 3:00 pm, Naoko-sensei was sitting in front of the computer in a daze. Suddenly, she heard the doorbell from outside.

Looking at it with her cat’s eye, she immediately opened the door at top speed.

“You...Why did you come?” Naoko-sensei for a time was

astonished and happy.

“Not welcomed?” The teenager said with a smile.

“Of course not. Come on in.” Naoko-sensei almost dragged him into the room.

Surprisingly, Naoko-sensei actually took him to her room.

Looking at this elegant and full of mature feminine flavored room, the teenager smiled and said: “Bringing me in, aren’t you afraid?”

Hearing these words, the face of Naoko-sensei immediately turned bright red.

“Fool, I’m joking.” The teenager walked up to her, pulled her arm and gently caressed her beautiful hair.

Naoko-sensei quietly laid down his arms motionless, and really liked his unique taste.

“What do you want to drink?” After a while, she lifted her bright red face and asked.

“If it’s not troublesome, I want to drink a cup of tea.”



“Then you wait here, I’ll be back soon.”

“Don’t worry, I’m not very thirsty.” The youth said, sitting down at the bedside.

When Naoko-sensei was going out of the door, she suddenly went back, and said: “Lei, if it’s you, I....won’t refuse it.”

Then she hurriedly ran out....

Ah really terrible, does she not know that being direct is a crime? If not for her present physical condition, I possibly wouldn’t be able to bear it and rush to capture her on the spot. The youth smiled bitterly, surprising his body that turned up and is welling with courageous vigor.

After five minutes, Naoko-sensei with a flushed face and came with a well-brewed tea

After she handed the cup to the boy, Naoko-sensei sat next to him and asked: “Today is Monday, don’t you have to attend class.”

“I wanted to see you, so I came to hang out.” The youth picked up the cup and drank it.

Hearing such a simple sentence, Naoko-sensei burst into tears.

“Next time don’t do that anymore, you’re still a student.” She

held his hand and said softly.

“You’re just like my family, like that kid, always worrying about these little things. Don’t worry, as long as I like to, I can get as many points as I want. How about you, what are you doing? Did you just wake up? The teenager asked.

“No, was just helping an English magazine translating things, moreover usually if I have free time I write some articles to send to the magazine company and submit a piece of writing.”

“Looking for something to do is good, but shouldn’t be too tired.”

“Ah, I know.” Naoko-sensei leaned her head on the youth’s shoulder and quietly watched him at his side, and couldn’t help but feel a bit overwhelmed.

—

“Mr. Moriki, can you recall, if you have offended anyone before.”  
A 30-year old police asked a middle-aged man.

Sitting at the man’s side was a handsome man and a jealous teenager. At this point, the boy had gloomy eyes and looked at the opposite wall, without saying a word.

“I’m sorry officer I don’t have any impression. My Lord is an honest and kind businessman, and should not have offended anyone. Moreover, our young master has excellent conduct and a

good academy student, which is more impossible. Therefore, I really don't know anything." The Butler-Moriki said a little embarrassed.

"Nagasaki student, Mr. Moriki, there's something I want to tell you. After analysis the scene, we determined that the fire is most likely caused by an artificial thing." The police put a plastic bag on the table, having a dark like soda can filled with something.

"Excuse me, what's this?" The butler asked.

"After testing it, we found that It contained a diethyl aluminum chloride. As long as the substance is exposed to the air for more than a minute, it would immediately burn. We've found several similar cans at the scene, so we have a reason to believe, that this is entirely deliberated, arson."

"Who did it?" The butler asked, surprised.

"We're investigating this, so if Mr. Moriki and Nagasaki student remember anything, please notify us immediately."

"I know. If I have a clue, then I'll contact you immediately. I've troubled you." The butler bowed towards the police.

"You're too polite, this is what we do. If there nothing else, you can go."

Without waiting for the butler to reply the delicate and

handsome youth stood up without making a sound.

“I’m sorry, this was too stimulating for my master, please forgive me for that.” The butler was a little embarrassed to say.

“I can understand that.” The policeman nodded.

Going out of the police station, the young master’s figure was getting further and further away, the butler sighed, ran and followed behind.

## Chapter 94 - Again?

---

“What, School festival? Didn’t we just have one not long ago?” On the roof, the eating Masashi looked up and asked.

“In two days, just like our school festival, we’ll also be together in theirs Pang Mu private high school anniversary of the founding of their school. You always skip class, so you certainly don’t know.” Kazumi stared coldly at him.

Seeing the nearby Rumi’s happy expression, Masashi asked: “Rumi, it seems like you’re very happy, do you like school festival that much?”

“Um, because I haven’t participated in the previous school festival, I can make up for it this time,” Rumi said with joy.

“In my opinion, this so-called school festival, besides being slightly for not needing to attend class, I really don’t see what fun the place is.”

“No, senior must accompany me to participate in the school festival,” Rumi said very firmly.

“Why?”

“Because....” Rumi looked at Kazumi seeking for help.

“Because in this school festival, Rumi’s attending the baseball game. You’re her senior, so, of course, you have to be present and cheer for her.” Kazumi said with a nice timing.

“What baseball, don’t you have kendo club? How are they linked to the baseball game?” Masashi was a bit puzzled.

“You don’t know, but although Rumi’s a member of the Kendo Club, but is also in the baseball club, so she’ll be participating in the game,” Kazumi explains.

“Hey, kid, taking part in both clubs, can you handle it?” Masashi said to Rumi.

The kendo girl a little bashfully said: “I actually didn’t want to participate, but when I was playing baseball with a few students, the baseball club’s coach saw me, and said that I throw well, and that he would like to invite me to join the baseball club. I told him I’m already in the Kendo Club, but he said it was fine, and finally I had promised him that after Kendo practice ends, and have time, to take part in practice.”

“No matter what, if you get too tired, don’t go, don’t force yourself too much, alright?”

“I know, senior.” Seeing Masashi’s concern for her, Rumi felt very happy in her heart.

“If so, then I’ll just go cheer for you as well. Do I also have to tie a

white sash on my forehead with the word ‘struggle’ on it?” Masashi jokingly said with a smile.

“I hate you, senior.” Rumi was charmingly angry.

On the side, Kazumi smiled.

—

“Naoko, what a coincidence, fancy seeing you here.” When Naoko-sensei walked out from the magazine company, a male voice stopped her.

“Mr. Junichiro, hello.” Naoko-sensei nodded to him to say hello.

“By the way, why’d you come here?” Junichiro asked with a smile on his face.

“The editor-in-chief of the magazine company was my classmate in high school, and she asked me to help translate some materials. I came here to give back the translated material to her.”

“Turned out to be so, but fortunately, I had some business around here. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have met you. If you’re free now, do want to go have a cup of coffee?”

Looking at her, she was dressed in an OL dress, with a faint yellow coat and white shirt. On the lower part of her body, she

wore a knee-length skirt and black high heels, giving off a full intellectually beauty stature but also an extremely hot high-class beauty, Junichiro found that a certain section of his body began to stir.

“I’m sorry, Mr. Junichiro, I have an appointment, I would like to go back.” Thinking that the boy might be waiting for her at the apartment door, she couldn’t wait but rush home.

“Naoko, you’re always so distant. I’m so sad.” Junichiro said in a joking tone.

“Mr. Junichiro, you’re joking. Based on your criteria, I believe that a lot of beautiful ladies are willing to accept your invitation. I really have something to do, if you’ll excuse me.” Naoko-sensei slightly bowed her head, and walked towards her car.

Junichiro with a slightly stiff smile looked at her leave, a mixture of desire and rage caused his face to gradually twist up.

Bitch, if a day you fall on my hand, I’ll certainly play with you.

He imagined that one day he would wantonly ravage her, Junichiro almost erupted from excitement.

He knew that she would appear here today, meeting her was no accident.

In order to understand her habits in Tokyo, he hired a private



detective to follow her again.

In the results, he discovered most of her daily life habits, and it also mentioned about the youth named Gennai Masashi.

For this boy, Junichiro was a bit impressed and seemed to remember that the youth was Naoko's former student.

But there's one thing that's very strange, in the last period of time, this youth called Gennai Masashi were often seen together with Naoko. With this discovery, he couldn't help but be wary of him.

I don't believe that there's a woman I can't get! Junichiro threw a cigarette in his mouth, entering the car, and started to drive.

—

“Ba, Ba....” It was the same as fart (Lei Yin's idea), a few fireworks resounded, representing that the school festival of Pang Hu private high school has finally begun.

Compared with their public high school, the Pang Mu private high school was really nice and wide.

Gorgeous school buildings, standard track, covered with expensive soccer field, an ideal baseball field, a wide school ground, indoor basketball and so on. These innumerable perfect facilities made them remember their public school, and compared

to this, theirs was like a prison.

Looking at it, the tuition for this privately established high school should be quite considerable. Although the Pang Mu private high school couldn't be compared to Aiko's school, it still shouldn't be that far of a difference.

Moreover, there was a little difference with the public highschool; this private school also has a middle school. But it was separated with the high school.

"I've always wanted to know, why is our high school and Pang Mu private high school together? What's the relationship between our principal with Pang Mu High School's principal?" Masashi badly wanted to know it and said with a smiling face.

"Really have a petty idea." Kazumi pinched his arm out.

"Then you tell me how it was," Masashi said with a shrug.

"We've heard that the high school principal and Pang Mu's principal was former college classmates. If the rumors are true, it's no wonder the two highschools are together." Kazumi said.

"How do you know that?" He didn't believe in such a person like Kazumi resembling that of a meddling woman, which was the same as asking other people about this matter.

"Curiosity about this news was around our class. Sitting near

them, I wanted to pretend that I didn't hear." Kazumi a little reluctantly said.

"Isn't that good? It could broaden your horizons, and also drive away mosquitos."

"Nonsense guy." Said the ill-humored Kazumi.

Rumi next to them was interestingly listening, and couldn't help but laugh.

Although the school environment and facilities were quite different compared with the public schools, the school festival was helped in very much the same way.

That is, there are a number of students that established stalls that sold snacks or games, coffee shops in some classes were also found, it was like a museum filled with picnic items for kids.

Like the last school festival, Kazumi and Masahi had no interest in the food stalls, nor the shooting, fishing for goldfish games, they didn't even bother to look at them.

The difference in the both of them was that Rumi had become enthusiastic, and wanted to try them.

Seeing her so happy, Masashi didn't want to rain on her parade and had to play with her, while Kazumi was watching them at the side.

It was rare to see such a beautiful and lovely girl visit the stall of men and made everyone forget including themselves. Many school boys at first wanted to finish buying for their preparation who had stopped moving motionless. Some of the more outgoing boys were constantly looking for opportunities to talk with Rumi. There was also two boys trying to ask for her phone number.

Suddenly, Rumi was overwhelmed by the boys' enthusiasm, quickly hiding behind Masashi. Seeing her delicate and charming look made the guys blood boil, and wished that they could hug her and be pitied on. For a moment, a very few people spread out and acted as if they were enveloped in the flames of war.

“Don't be afraid. It's all right.” Masashi said with a smile. Although it was a bit funny, he couldn't help but admire this cheeky little imp.

Seeing Masashi smile, Rumi settled down. And a bit disturbingly said: “Senior, let's get out of here.”

“Don't you like the dolls? I'll help you win back one before going.” Masashi patted her hand.

“Thank you, senior,” Rumi smiled sweetly at him. Somehow, she seemed to no longer be afraid.

Seeing such an innocent girl being so gentle and obedient to this ugly boy, all the boys couldn't wait to rush up and kick him.

“Well, can I start?” Masashi went to the small stall and called out to the young boss.

“Oh....you can begin.”

After three minutes, the male student who set upped the stall soon cried....

“Senior, I don’t actually need these many, can I give it back to him?” The kendo girl was hugging a big pile of dolls and asked Masashi.

“Rumi is a really good kid; you can do as you like,” Masashi said with a smile.

Rumi was happy and laughed, then picked two of her favorites from the pile of dolls, and then gave it back to the boy.

“This...is your prize, I won’t take it back.” The male student’s face reddened all over and said.

“I don’t want that many. Thank You.” Rumi smiled at him, then drew back towards Masashi and walked away.

Looking at her slender back gradually getting farther and farther away, the male student for a long time couldn’t utter a single word.

# Chapter 95 - Baseball

---

Until they went to the crowded place the boys who followed her slowly dispersed themselves.

The Kendo girl finally sighed with relieved.

“Looks like our little Rumi starts to have some fans,” Masashi grinningly said.

“Fool, the male fans of Rumi are like flies in this school, you think they are only here?” Kazumi rolled her eyes.

“Actually, it is not like that, senior don’t listen to Kazumi’s nonsense.” The young Kendo girl shyly said.

“It is a good thing that someone shows interest in you, it shows our little girl has grown up. We have walked this far, let us get some drinks.” Masashi proposed.

The two girls nodded their heads and then walked toward the classroom building.

“Kazumi, what time is it now?” Halfway through their destination, Rumi suddenly asked Kazumi.

“It’s 10 past 10. Is there something wrong?” Kazumi looked at her watch and asked.

“Oh no, I almost forgot. I promised the coach to go to the Baseball field at 10 o’clock. I am doomed, he’s going to scold me this time.” Rumi wrinkled her beautiful face and said.

“If you go there now it should be fine, you want me to go with you?” Kazumi held her hand and comforted her.

“No, I can go there myself. Senior, enjoy your drink with Kazumi, don’t wait for me. I have to go now.” With that, she ran in the direction of Baseball field in a hurry.

“What a cheeky little devil, just said she has now grown up, turns out she is still the same.” Masashi looked at her back and said.

“But this Rumi is cute. Don’t you think?” Kazumi said.

“Always promoting other people, if you would smile more often, you are also very cute,” Masashi smiled as he twisted her cheek.

Kazumi slapped his hand away and scolded with a smile: “Indecent guy. Please, don’t use the word ‘cute’ to describe me. That will only lower other people’s appetite.”

“You are mistaken. Boys will only lose their appetite if they are pregnant. Actually, all girls are cute, the only difference is people will not appreciate them. In my eyes, you are a cute girl, and no less than Rumi.” Masashi said as he looked her in the eyes.

“Fool, let’s go. Didn’t you say you wanted something to drink?” Kazumi lowered her head to grasp his arm and said.

“Em.” Masashi was pulled by her and continued to move forward.

‘Hateful guy, always saying things that make me cry,’ Kazumi scolded him in her heart.

When the two people went to the front of the school building they suddenly saw the magnificently decorated wooden stage in front of it. On top, several boys and girls were performing a live theater. Below the stage, there was a crowd of students watching.

“Yes, I remember on the last school festival you said you attended a live theater as one of the performers. Although in the end you did not participate, what role were you supposed to play?”

“How could you still remember such a trivial thing,” Kazumi said.

“I have no other choice, my memory is that good.”

“I am not going to tell you.” Kazumi rolled her eyes at him and said with a smile.

Masashi smiled but did not pursue the matter anymore. He liked this lively and spirited Kazumi.



When they were looking for a place to sit and have a drink, they found a decorated ice cream parlor on the second floor and went inside the classroom.

“Welcome.” To see someone came in, several cute girls wearing maid uniform showed their bright smile and bowed to them.

“What would you like to drink?” When they sat down, another girl came over and asked.

“Kazumi, what do you want?” Masashi ask.

“A glass of ice water.”

“Two glasses of ice water please,” Masashi said to the girl.

“Please wait a moment.” That female student registered their order and walked away.

“When will Rumi’s Baseball game begin?” Masashi asked.

“2 o’clock in the afternoon. When we go there, we’ll buy her a lunch box.

Masashi nodded his head, “Although the Baseball coach should prepare the lunch for her, just in case, it’s better if we bring her one.”

At two in the afternoon, the Baseball match will begin.

The two schools chosen members added up to more than 50 students arrived together at the Baseball field.

In Tokyo, the price of land is more expensive than other cities. To have a standard Baseball field not only indicated that Pang Mu private High School have the money, but it also showed that the school put much of their attention on this Baseball sports.

One must know, many schools, including the public High School that Masashi attended to, rarely have the standard Baseball field.

Many Baseball clubs can only train on the School playground. When the playground is occupied, they are forced to play on the roof.

Baseball is a National sports in Japan. Many boys started to play Baseball since their childhood. The majority of parents are also very supportive for their kids to play Baseball.

After entering High School, the Baseball match increased a lot. Japan National Sports Festival, The Meiji Shrine Big Competition are the nationwide competition.

The reason why Japanese people are so concerned about High School Baseball is that a lot of professional players were excavated from the High School Baseball players.

As for the High School Baseball Number One Tournament, it is called “Koshien” League (Japanese High School Baseball League Tournament).

This is the national competition that all high school students are excited for. During the game, a total of 4102 teams will attend each year in spring and summer seasons. The winners of these game are hard to estimate.

Although there are so many teams participating in “Koshien” League, it will not be so easy for a team to participate. A team had to beat all high school Baseball clubs in their respective region before they can obtain the admission ticket.

In addition, all the “Koshien” stadiums can accommodate the seat for 70000 spectators. When it reaches the final stage, the audience literally reaches a hundred of thousands and more. Meanwhile, the Japanese National Television and National Radio will broadcast the entire match. With this degree of national attention, all of the high school students take it as their highest honor to be able to participate in this “Koshien” League.

Compared with Masashi’s school, the Pang Mu High School Baseball Club was very famous. In the last “Koshien” League the school has won the third place, which was a very proud achievement.

Because the Pang Mu High School will have a Baseball match for every commemoration day, it attracts a lot of students spectator from the other school besides the two original schools. The lawn outside the Baseball field was packed full of people.

Every commemoration day, Pang Mu high school Baseball club will invite other high rankings high school Baseball club to a match, but Masashi's school Baseball club did not have the qualification for this. The reason they can compete this time was probably that the Pang Mu high school looked at the face of the school's Principal, and made an exception for them.

Seeing Rumi's official pitcher costume and obviously more petite figure compared to her other teammates, Masashi, who stood just outside the barbed wire, burst out laughing, "The pitcher's uniform doesn't fit on her."

"Winning or losing doesn't matter, as long as she's not hurt," Kazumi said with a bit of worry.

# Chapter 96 - Start Of A Match

---

The coin was tossed, and the result, the first to attack is the Pang Mu high school.

The first to go on the field was a medium built boy wearing a beige colored uniform from the Pang Mu baseball club. He took the bat and went to the side of the home plate.

The Asakura public High School didn't put in Rumi yet, but another lanky boy.

Waiting for the opposing team to prepare, and then the pitcher immediately threw a straight ball.

“Pow!” The ball was hit up the sky.

The Pang Mu hitter immediately dropped the bat and ran to the first base.

When the ball was caught by the second baseman, the hitter had already run past the second base.

Fortunately, in the end, the person on the third base received the ball before the opposition had the chance to run there.

“Second base hit!” The Umpire announced loudly.

“Just now was a ball, right away swinging the bat boldly.” The female manager of the Asakura baseball club wiped off her sweat.

The second batter of the Pang Mu school suddenly made a sacrifice bunt, making the Asakura baseman unable to react which allowed the Pang Mu runner to safely reach the base.

“It doesn’t matter; we have a chance.” The bearded coach of the Asakura school at the side was obviously annoyed.

“Nobody out, and a person on the third base...” The female manager recorded and sighed in her heart, ‘it’s only just been a few minutes, and we’re already in trouble.’

“Really in trouble, we should have just participated in the Koshien tournament training, why should we accompany such a bad team?” A player in the lounge of the Pang Mu school complained somewhat dissatisfied.

“We don’t have a choice. It’s because our high school principal was university students with the Asakura school principal.” A fat player in their team said with his eyes closed.

“The old guy really doesn’t know how to think, this garbage team is simply not our opponents, so there’s really no meaning to this.” Another member rested his chin on his hand and said.

“In short, let’s quickly get rid of them, ah I still have to go see the Miss Pang Mu school election.”

“That’s right, if we have a 20 point lead in before the 3rd inning, they can only obediently leave.”

Several other members loudly declared.

“A group of pesky flies,” Kazumi said coldly.

Because Masashi and Kazumi were sitting not very far from their seating area, Kazumi could also hear their voices.

The game continues, when the lanky guy pitched again, and the ball was hit.

When the Pang Mu player was rushing to the first base,

“out!” The umpire suddenly announced loudly. The Asakura school’s shortstop was able to react quickly and sent the ball back to first base.

“It seems that Asakura school’s second baseman is good.” A Pang Mu player wearing a shirt and a hat that was standing on the sidelines said quietly.

“Masato, will you enter the game?” Beside him, a pretty girl holding a scoreboard asked.

“Even if there’s a good player, if his teammates are no good, then

he'll be useless." The boy didn't answer but said something to himself.

"WHACK!" Another ball was hit.

Fortunately, the ball hasn't landed, and an Asakura player caught the ball.

"Another out, a person on third base, zero points, it seems that our team isn't performing well today." At the east side of the stadium, a black-suited Pang Mu principal proudly said.

"Pang Mu brother, your school's baseball team's strength is quite famous in Tokyo. I envy you to have such a good team." The Asakura principal flatteringly said.

"Your school also has several good members Ha Ha Ha." The Pang Mu principal happily listened.

When the two teams swapped between offense and defense, the Pang Mu school sent out a very strong pitcher.

This was clearly a power-type pitcher, the ball he throws both quick and accurate, and immediately striking out two hitters from the Asakura team.

The fourth player was the center fielder of the team. At this point, the situation was, two out, and a person on second base making quite a bad scenario for the Asakura team.



“WHACK!” Contrary to the people’s expectation, the bat actually hit the ball.

A Pang Mu baseman was busy following the ball allowing a player of the opposing team to quickly ran back to home base.

“How’d we allow them to get one point ahead of us!” A Pang Mu player angrily cursed.

“Fool, this is the result of underestimating the opponent,” Masato whispered to the boy who cursed.

The second inning, it was finally Rumi’s turn to play. Because she was wearing a pitcher hat slightly larger for her, except for a few people, many people didn’t know that she was a girl.

After looking for a bit at the position where Masashi was sitting, she began to pitch towards the Pang Mu batter.

With respect to just the pitcher, Rumi’s throw was significantly lighter and much faster, although it doesn’t make a hard sound when it hits the glove, it still wasn’t a ball that the Pang Mu players can hit.

Nevertheless, the Asakura coach didn’t feel particularly happy. Pang Mu school’s strength is far more than this, and the reason why Rumi’s pitch couldn’t be hit, was simply because their players still haven’t gotten used to her pitch just yet. But then again after a

few inning, it's hard to say what would happen. He still wasn't supposed to put in Rumi until the next inning. Originally he had intended for the pitcher to last till the third inning, but seeing that their ball was always getting hit, there was no way under it, and he had no choice but to put in Rumi in advance.

Soon, the first half of the third inning ended, it was now Asakura's turn to attack. At this time, both sides were no longer able to get any points.

For this result, the Pang Mu coach was very angry, cursing at them on the sidelines.

“Good!”

“Hit! It was hit, very good!”

“Arikawa, swing form above at the narrow strike zone, and hit the ball out of here! Don't put your hand up too high.”

“I know, coach.”

The Asakura coach loudly guided the player at the side.

The game continued, both sides were playing more and more intensely.

“What's going on? That fellow again. When hitting, it wouldn't

connect at all with the ball and would be received by the catcher.” In the lounge area, a player furiously threw his hat on the floor.

“So far, the ball has been grounded out, for the most part, we have a person on the second base. Moreover, the pitcher’s quite good, and hasn’t been sent over yet.” Masato at back of the seating area looked at the scoreboard manager and said.

“OUT!” A loud voice called out, another player was out.

It can be seen from the scoreboard that it was now the second half of the 5thinning.

“It seems like the strength that the Asakura high school was a lot stronger than we’ve imagined. I wonder why we haven’t heard any previous news of them?” Masato looked at the manager and said.

“According to the information in my hand, the Asakura baseball club was only set up last year, because they didn’t conduct any practice session with other schools, I haven’t noted of this team. I’ve abandoned my duty. Please forgive me.” Then, the manager bowed towards the players and admitted her mistake.

“Actually, it wasn’t your fault.”

“Yes, please don’t mind, we won’t blame you.”

“You’re too polite.”

Seeing such a beautiful girl apologizing, these high school players felt very embarrassed.

Great! The principal of Asakura was elated. I can't believe that the coach I invited casually without even caring, was able to train the team so well. After I go back, I must praise him well. Looking at the Pang Mu principal, his complexion became more and more ugly, it was totally dark.

"You go call coach Tanimori." The Pang Mu principal said to the secretary standing next to him.

"I would like to ask what's happening? Are we really becoming a weaker team?" When the coach arrived in front of the principal, the principal asked.

# Chapter 97 - Strange Person

---

“I’m sorry, I’ve underestimated the enemy too much.” The coach lowered his head towards the principal.

“This isn’t a joke, they’re now a point ahead, and it’s already the end of the fifth inning.”

“Please be assured principal, we’ve now gradually become gradually clear of the opponent’s strength, and their most important defense is the second baseman and their center fielder, it’s just that their pitching is faster than what we’ve expected. With these data, we can go out and display our strength.” The coach said.

“I hope you don’t disappoint me.” The principal coughed as he said that.

After returning to the lounge, the coach Tanimori looked at Masato, said: “You should prepare, after this inning, you’ll go on the field.”

“Many thanks, coach,” Masato smiled.

Looking at the scoreboard, coach Tanimoria felt a little regret. They’ve indeed underestimated their enemy too much, If they had known that the team would have caused them too much trouble, he would have sent out first-team players in the beginning, rather than having a practice session for the players scrimmage. However, they’re sending out their ace pitcher Masato to hold

down the line, so it shouldn't be a problem.

Because according to the normal procedure, besides having a member injured, during the inning they can't casually change players. Therefore just before the fifth inning end, the pitcher who had only pitched five rounds suddenly 'accidentally' twisted his legs.

When his replacement Fukuoka Masato wore a pitcher clothes and went on stage, many girls immediately stood up and screamed loudly for him.

"Does this fellow owe them a lot of money?" Masashi smiled while saying so.

"Fool." Kazumi looked at him with one eye ill-humoredly.

"I didn't think that even Masato's going in the field, it looks like this will be a good game."

"I think this game will begin to be a one-sided game, but that new team did play pretty well too."

"I feel the same thing."

Many audiences were having such a conversation.

Although Fukuoka Masato only pitched three times, the inning

was over already. After he had finished pitching, Masashi understood why those girls were so excited.

The man is handsome, but also throws the ball pretty well, looking at the strength of the pitch, it seems better than Rumi. This was the difference between men and women inborn ability.

The first half of the Sixth Inning, because Fukuoka Masato went in the game, Pang Mu's morale seemed to have increased. And two were almost successful in reaching the first base.

This was the real strength of the Pang Mu baseball team, although they have several substitute players, their overall coordination with first-team players were not too far behind.

“Strike, batter out!”

After striking out the third batter, Rumi's arm obviously felt a lot heavier.

The one who was responsible for the fourth batting was Fukuoka Masato, seeing him, Rumi felt a kind of invisible pressure. From their manager's information of him, they knew that Fukuoka Masato was a versatile player. Not only does he pitch well, but he was also an outstanding batter. Moreover, his running speed was also quite famous.

Preparing to swing the bat. Rumi clenched her teeth and threw the ball on her hand quickly.

“Pow!” The ball was hit out, hitting the barbed wire.

“Foul.” Cried out the umpire.

Rumi was wiping away her sweat and thought in her heart that it was close.

Just like in fencing when she encountered strong rivals, Rumi suddenly wanted to beat this guy.

And without thinking, threw a straight ball towards him....

“Unexpectedly Masato is also unable to hit the ball, it seems like the pitcher is very fierce.” After seeing their team’s ace pitcher struck out, a member that sat beside the female manager said.

“The pitcher’s arm is used up now, pushing him at the moment would be like throwing oneself. I don’t think that the game would last longer.” Another team member said.

As he said, even the female manager could also see that the pitcher’s pitch speed was obviously a lot slower than before.

When the competition was getting intense, no one could have thought that such a matter would suddenly happen.

“Coach, please let me in the field, I am fine.” In the Asakura



lounge, the center fielder Yamaguchi looked at the bearded coach and pleaded.

“You sit down, I will absolutely not let you play again.” The coach said loudly.

“Coach, what do we do now? Who can we send out to replace him?” Asked the female manager.

“Let me think about it.” Then, the bearded coach went out of the room.

He didn't think that things would turn out this way, when Yamaguchi was stealing a base, their team member unexpectedly hit one another. But fortunately he wasn't hit on the eyes, or he might really be blind. Now the score is 1:2, although their behind Pang Mu by one point, if the game continues, they should be able to catch up. Because half of the other team's members were only bench warmers.

In his mind, he was more inclined to stop the game. Because after a year of hard training, he could only stick with this members, because several of the third-year players had to deal with tests, and couldn't participate in this practice session. If not for unexpectedly finding this pitcher Rumi, competing would possibly be a problem.

The remaining players on the bench were mostly not been trained yet. Their strength was only a little bit better than the average person. He really didn't want to send them up and disgrace them.

But stopping the game because of a player being injured, wouldn't be passable. All right, let's continue to play the game. Hopefully, we don't lose too ugly.

Making up his mind, the coach was about to turn back, when suddenly he saw a man standing behind him quietly.

"Who are you?" The bearded coach was shocked, when did this guy appear behind me?

"It seems like you're a bit in trouble." Appearing to him with a mask on, he couldn't tell whether it was a man or a boy's voice.

"What do you want?" The bearded coach found it bothersome, as he didn't have the mood to this fellow's words.

"I know that your member has been injured, can you let me replace him and enter the field?" The person said without introducing himself.

"I will not let people of unknown origin play." The coach said, frowning.

"Really?" The man finished, walked over to the shelf holder of the bats, and picked one up.

"What do you want?" The bearded coach quickly stepped back.

The man didn't say anything and just held the bat with both his hands, exhibiting batting position.

"Whoosh!" The air went towards him as the person swung the bat.

Hearing the sound of his swing, the bearded coach's heart suddenly skipped a bit.

"Whoosh," "Whoosh", "Whoosh", The person continuously swung the bat.

Afterward, he put the bat back on the shelf and walked away.

"Hey, wait." The bearded coach immediately ran up to stop him.

"What happened?" This time, it was the man that asked.

"Tell me, how many base hit have you done?" The bearded coach asked eagerly.

"To be honest, I rarely play baseball, but I can tell you this, even if it was a bullet flying over, I could still hit it. As for believing it or not, I'm sorry, that's your problem." Then, that person continued to go out.

"Well, I'll let you play." The bearded coach decided on the spot.

“Thank you.” The man said dismissively.

“Hey, why are you wearing a mask?” While agreeing to let him play, the bearded coach still thought that this guy’s attire was very suspicious.

“Because I have a cold. Cough....” As if to confirm these words, he coughed several times, continuously.

I hope I won’t regret this decision, looking at how suspicious this guy was, the bearded coach thought so, a little worried.

# Chapter 98 - Masked Rider

---

“Strike, Batter Out!” On the field, the umpire shouted.

Looking at the three consecutive swing of the batter of Asakura, the batter was struck out by Fukuoka Masato, after which Tanimori coach finally smiled.

Yes, he was indeed the trump card, and he had also attained those two points.

Two batters were out, after the next one, he must rest well. Tanimori thought while rubbing his back.

Compared to Tanimori coach, Fukuoka Masato's face was very serious.

Looking at the batter on the batting area, with his hat dangling, and a mask on his face, Masato's intuition told him that this guy was odd.

Although the angle of his batting posture and grip seemed to be very standard, he didn't know why he felt an unexplainable pressure coming from this person.

Perhaps it was just an illusion, in order to test this, Fukuoka Masato threw a ball.

“Foul.” Cried the umpire.

Is this fellow really a batter? Even hitting such an obvious ‘ball’. Masato increasingly thought that this guy has a problem.

No matter what, I’ll just throw a fast one. Masato threw a straight ball.

“Foul.”

With the same result, Masato began to be wary. Although it was a foul ball, after all, he did hit it. Logically speaking, that ball should have been impossible to be hit.

Masato afraid of his enemy, and threw another fast straight ball.

“Foul.”

“Foul.”

With this two consecutive foul ball, the other players finally began to notice this guy.

“Coach, who is he? He’s quite fierce, he can unexpectedly hit the ball thrown by Fukuoka Masato.” Seeing the player hit the ball from Pang Mu team’s ace pitcher, Rumi speedily asked with amazement.

“An odd person.” The bearded coach definitely said.

“Foul.”

Fukuoka Masato panted and looked at him a little. Is this guy a monster? Even hit his ball every single time.

In fact, he had seen his coach's gesture and understood what he meant. But he was just unwilling to do so.

Finally, he decided to do it according to his coach's instructions. And threw such a soft ball.

Mercy? I didn't receive such feeling for such a long time. Masashi smiled bitterly in his heart.

“Ball.” Fortunately, this guy didn't hit it.

After several consecutive balls, this guy would finally walk to first base.

Looking at the ‘Masked Rider’ standing motionless in the batting area, the Pang Mu catcher couldn't help but say to him: “Hey, why aren't you going yet?”

“He isn't pitching yet?” He makes a low and deep sound from inside his mask.

“You’re kidding, right? You’ve been sent to first base.” The catcher couldn’t believe it and looked at him.

“Can’t I hit again?”

“This student, there’s a limit in joking. If you don’t leave, then I’ll give you a violation.” The umpire stood up and finally couldn’t tolerate it anymore and opened his mouth to say.

“This is really complicated.” He said something to himself, then carried the bat away.

Did he really not understand the rules? The catcher hearing his words, raised a doubt in his heart. But he quickly rejected the idea, playing so good, how can such people not know the rules.

It was the 8th inning, and Pang Mu school was leading with a score of 2:1. At this time, it was the Pang Mu team’s turn to attack.

After the end of the previous inning, Pang Mu team picked up the pace and attacked, trying to enlarge the gap of the score as much as possible.

At this time, the players on the field finally understood how terrifying this ‘Masked Rider’ was.

Whatever the ball was, whether it hit the ground or a fly ball, as long as they went to the centerfield position, he would catch it and immediately block them.



And afterward, would suddenly appear in front of the Pang Mu players making them unintentionally avoid his position.

From the beginning of the change from defense to offense, after the appearance of the strange man, the game had become too subtle and strange.

Unexpectedly, Asakura school actually had such a hidden monster in their team. Hopefully, we don't bump into him during the Koshien trials. Tanimori coach secretly prayed on the sidelines.

“Pow!” Fukuoka Masato finally succeeded in hitting again.

The score became 1:3, Pang Mu leading by 2 points.

After the exchange of offense and defense, it was Asakura team's turn to attack.

Although because Asakura team had three excellent players center fielder, second baseman, and pitcher, their defense seemed to be pretty good. But was obviously far worse when it came to them attacking.

Rumi was not genuinely able to play the game, after the center fielder Yamaguchi was replaced by this 'Masked Rider'. But because Rumi lacked power, even though she was able to hit the ball, she wouldn't be able to send the ball flying, so she wasn't able

to become a good batter. Because of an injury, the centerfielder Yamaguchi had to leave, so now all eyes were stuck on the 'Masked Rider' body.

“Ball!” Because Tanimori coach didn't want to cause any trouble, he instructed Masato to let him walk. Although unconvinced, he just followed the instruction.

“Ball!”

Masato was about to throw another 'ball when he saw the eyes of the odd man.

He sneered?

Suddenly, a strong anger filled Fukuoka Masato's brain. This guy dare to laugh at me?

Disobeying the coach's instruction, Masato threw the fastest ball of the whole game.

“Boom!” It was a different sound from the hits that was happened before, and then the ball flew far out.

At that moment, Fukuoka Masato just felt like he was being poured with cold water.

“Home run, it's a homerun.” Looking at the scene, some people

suddenly shouted loudly.

Indeed a home run, and people even saw that the ball flew over the outfield fence, but it still continued to fly.

For a time, everyone cried aloud. It wasn't only just the Asakura players, even many of the audience went into a frenzy.

This long-distance home run, not to mention high school students, it was also difficult even for professional players to do such a hit. But, in this practice match that no one had actually cared about, a person was actually able to do such a hit.

It felt like a person in school during physical education was suddenly able to break a world record, people just couldn't believe it.

After going through the three bases, the Masked man finally stepped on the home plate, went back and placed the bat on the shelf. And the person just continued to walk normally.

In this way, to everyone's surprise, the 8th inning ended.

When the 9th inning began, all players of Asakura school was like they had taken stimulants. Finally, the third batter was struck out, Pang Mu didn't have the power to get a point from Asakura again.

Soon, it was Fukuoka Masato turn as the fourth batter, but looked first at the center fielder position where the 'Masked Rider'

stood, and then walked wryly towards the batting zone.

Rumi also knew that they were in a critical moment, as long as her pitch isn't hit by Fukuoka Masato, then they still had the chance of winning the game. Because there was still that 'fellow'.

So she made a move that surprised everyone.

With four 'balls' the ace of Pang Mu team, Fukuoka Masato, walked towards the first base.

From the beginning up to now, everyone saw that this little pitcher of Asakura no matter who the batter was, would always challenge them and throw a straight ball. This time, she used such a trick, as she was very confident on the 'Masked Rider'.

After being walked, Fukuoka Masato coldly snorted and left.

When it was Asakura team's last time to attack, everyone couldn't wait for the first few players to hurry and get struck out. The person they wanted to see was this 'Masked Rider.'

Finally, it was the odd person's turn, and hundreds of people's attention looked at the freak's play.

When he had stood at the batting zone, the audience vigorously applauded right away, the scene was very exciting.

Fukuoka Masato on the opposing side, he listened to the coach's words, throw 'ball' at him again?

To be honest, he felt very awkward. Previously, after the person got a home run, all his pride disappeared. Subconsciously, he thought that this plan would be the best. But he couldn't afford to lose face.

He was Pang Mu team's ace baseball player and was known as the most likely to lead the team to Koshien, who had allowed them to get third place in the past. If he were to throw 'ball' to opponents in such a practice session, his reputation would take a very big blow.

He was embarrassed at the time. He saw Tanimori coach standing on the sidelines making fierce gestures.

I know, troublesome old foggy! Fukuoka Masato was too lazy to think, and threw a 'ball' again.

Thus, he threw such an obvious 'ball'. Even though it was a 'ball', the ball that the ace player threw, was a speed that ordinary people weren't able to hit.

"Boom!" Beyond everyone's surprise, a nightmarish sound came out again.

Fukuoka Masato had a kind of shocking feeling.

“Grand Slam, Home Run!” If the crowd went crazy before, this time, they went absolutely crazy.

Making a ‘ball’ into a homerun? Everyone couldn’t believe their eyes.

The bearded coach had different ideas from the youthful kids, it was as if he could see the door to Koshien, where a few beauties were wearing a sexy bunny outfit, bowing towards him and said: “Welcome.”

—

“Sorry, stomach was a little uncomfortable. How’s the game going?” Masashi went back to Kazumi and asked.

Kazumi looked at him with a very strange look, then said: “Tie, 3:3 at the end of the game.”

“That’s the way to go.” Masashi nodded and no longer spoke, just looking at the Asakura players on the field huddling together.

Kazumi turned around and looked at him again, then gently said something: “Brother, because of an upset stomach you wanted to wear a mask?”

Hearing her words, Masashi made a wry smile, “Can’t you sometimes be like a normal girl and not be so smart?”

Kazumi didn't answer and asked him: "Where'd you get the mask from? Are you always carrying it? This kind of suspicious person can only be perverted."

"I got it from the infirmary. Hey, don't tell anyone, not even Rumi, because that kid just can't shut her mouth close." Since the time at the Kendo club, where he had defeated Ogata, he was often asked by Omura-sensei to join the Kendo club over and over again. If the bearded coach of the baseball club knew who the 'Masked Rider' was, he might get bored to death by both of them.

"Brother, you're more like a monster. Is there something you can't do?" Kazumi said with a sigh.

"Hey, this is a compliment from a sister to her brother right? To be honest, I really don't understand baseball, so many rules, sick and tired of them all."

The previous owner of the body Hirota Masashi, besides playing the game with the airplane, he didn't really play baseball.

"Brother, I found out that you favor Rumi very much," Kazumi said.

"Oh, actually I just wanted to try and give it a go. After all, I haven't played the game before. But also gradually found that it was a really fun game."

# Chapter 99 - Twisting

---

“Hey, kid, why are you start crying, haven’t I called you just a couple of days ago?”

“I know, after a period of time, I will visit you in Switzerland, if you cry again, careful I’ll spank your ass.”

“Why, the little puppy pee in your bed? What hateful fellow, then have you teach him a lesson?”

“You mean, in two months you will attend the school? Great, at that time, I want Alice Lynn take a picture of you in school uniform and email it to me.”

“Hehe, is it? What do you want then?”

Watching the youth spoke a fluent English on the telephone, teacher Naoko’s eyes exposed an obsessed look.

The more she spend time together with this youth, the more she discovered he’s unfathomably deep.

He was actually proficient in Chinese, English, German, French, Italian, and other languages. Almost as if he has lived in those countries for many years. His vast knowledge on the other things made her speechless.



What kind of boy did she fall in love to?

After hanging up the phone, the youth turned to her and discovered that her look was different, and can't help but curiously asked: "What's the matter, feeling uncomfortable?"

Shaking her head gently, teacher Naoko smiled and asked him: "The one who spoke with you on the telephone is the little girl from Switzerland that you told me about?"

"Yes. That kid is very clingy, but she's quite good, unlike the other annoying little rascal." Thinking of how quiet and well-behaved Amy is, the corner of the youth's mouth revealed a warm smile.

Seeing Masashi's smiling face, teacher Naoko suddenly filled with a sour, very uncomfortable feeling.

A strange impulse drove her to closely hug the youth's neck.

"Lei, I'll be well-behaved."

Teacher Naoko bent down near his ear and gently said these words.

After saying that, the skin on her neck turned pink. She almost shrunk all her body in the youth's arms, did not dare to raise her head again. Moreover, her whole body gently shivered.

Suddenly, the youth's nasal cavity can smell the indescribable fragrance of a mature woman's scent.

Almost forcibly, the youth lifted her head with his hand, and then his lips tightly pressed against her as tender and as beautiful red peach blossom lips.

From the almost rough beginning, the youth gradually became very gentle in his plunder.

Careful and gentle like tasting the most delicious thing, he savored the beautiful woman's delicate lips.

Their tongues were constantly and incessantly tangled up inside their mouth, like a pair of tightly wound, writhing little snakes.

When teacher Naoko felt she was going to melt, the youth suddenly put his hand inside her clothes, and then slowly moving upward along the smooth and creamy skin. She suddenly felt her heart beating like a drum.

But before she could adapt, the youth's other hand probed into her skirt.....

"Ah...." This intense stimulation directly caused teacher Naoko to cry out.

Finally, the unceasingly moving upward left hand of the youth arrived at her can't be grasped, well-rounded and firm abundant and climbed there. Just like when he tasted her luscious lips, he carefully played with it.

Teacher Naoko felt like she was going crazy, the pleasure kept on expanding like tides until she unconsciously moaned. Even worse, through the thin cotton fabric, the youth's seemingly charged hand, constantly caressed playing with her most intimate private part.

“Ehm...uh,” The entire room echoed the impossible to be made homemade charming chirp of teacher Naoko.

When the youth's hand crossed that thin layer of last defense, teacher Naoko's whole body suddenly became rigid as she instinctively clamped her two thighs.

After a while, under the youth's gentle caress, she gradually relaxed. Slowly, she opened her clamped legs, letting the youth's hand reached in.

“Ah!” Under the youth's wanton ministrations, teacher Naoko uncontrollably cried out again, and simultaneously her two hands tightly clutched his back.

When the youth transferred his hand to her right abundance, he felt the rapid heartbeat from his partner. Suddenly, his whole body shook, and he stopped his double action.

Feeling the youth evacuated his hands from her, the blushing teacher Naoko held down his hands, “Lei....as long as it’s you, I really don’t mind....” Before she even finished, she has not dared to look at the youth’s face.

“It does not matter, there is still plenty of time, after a while when your body is ready, we’ll do it again.” The youth adjusted his slightly rapid breathing, then gently put the strand of hair on her forehead behind the ear.

Because their bodies were pressed together, teacher Naoko clearly knew what the youth wanted to do at that moment, while at the same time, it became increasingly clear to her how the youth took pity on her.

“Fool, why do you cry?” The youth lowered his head to kiss away the tears in her eyes.

Teacher Naoko shook her head, “Lei, I...am afraid, truly afraid to die like this. I don’t want to leave you. I want to cook for you. I want every day at home waiting for you to come back. I want to serve you well. I’m really afraid....” She covered her face and wept.

The youth put his right hand to pry her hand away from her face and pulled her face up, “I told you, I won’t let anything happen to you.”

With teary eyes, teacher Naoko looked at his calm as water eyes, and suddenly unable to bear, clinging to him.

After a long time, the youth lowered his head and said to her: “Today the weather is good, let us go outside for a walk.”

Teacher Naoko nodded her head and reluctantly parted with the youth’s holding hands.

Suddenly feeling the youth’s scorching gaze, she looked at herself and found out her dress was a mess, but also revealed a large portion of her white skin. Suddenly, a burst of shame welled up on her face and she hastily tidied up her clothes.

Sometimes, when a mature woman shy, her demeanor was more exciting to look at than a girl, let alone a stunner like her. Looking at her back, the youth’s desire intermittently rose up again.

—

The next morning, when the three people arrived at the school gate, they saw several cars parked at the front.

“I seem to recall a scene similar to this,” Masashi said.

“It is a bit familiar.” Kazumi nodded her head.

Back to the classroom, he saw the inside was a mess, and only a few students sat there. The majority of the people was nowhere to be seen.

“Good morning, Masashi.” A student greeted him.

“Good morning.” Masashi nodded.

Since the truth about him being falsely accused spread out, perhaps out of a little guilt, his classmates seemed to warm up to him a lot. Regarding this phenomenon, he himself is not accustomed to it.

“What happened today, where are the other people?” Masashi asked that student.

“Don’t you know?”

“Know what?” Cut the crap, if I knew, why would I need to ask you.

“It turns out our school has a very powerful hitter.” That student very excitedly said as if he was referring to himself.

# Chapter 100 - Discussion

---

“Oh, that?” Masashi didn’t want to ask again.

Seeing that Masashi wasn’t interested at all, the student couldn’t help be a bit agitated, said: “It’s true, weren’t you at the School Festival of the Pang Mu high school the day before yesterday? That afternoon, when our school had a practice match with them. You should also know that the baseball team of Pang Mu high school is very famous here in Tokyo, that’s why everyone thought that our school’s team would suffer a disastrous defeat, some people even added that they won’t be able to do well and lose 30:0. But, do you know what happened afterwards?” His saliva almost sprayed at Masashi’s face.

For the sake of safety, Masashi hurriedly took a step back.

“Right after a player got injured in the game, the coach of the baseball club sent out a mysterious man wearing a mask on the field. Do you know what happened afterwards? The person unexpectedly hit a homerun. And the ball that hit was even thrown by Pang Mu high school’s ace pitcher. Then afterwards, you certainly can’t believe it, but in the last inning, the fellow had unexpectedly hit a home run out of a ‘ball.’ I saw that scene at that time, I even almost fainted. Now some people said that so long as the person gives one of the two home run balls, they’ll offer ¥10000, especially the last ball, it’s said that the price had now risen to ¥15000.” The student continued delightedly.

“Schoolmate, I want to ask where the other people went,” Masashi said ill-humoredly.

“Oh, excuse me. It’s that, this morning, those newspaper reporters from the sports magazine all flooded over to our baseball team coach saying that they want an interview, and now all the other people went to the school ground.”

“Don’t they need to attend class?” Masashi asked.

“It’s such a big news in the school, so who would even have the mood to attend class. I also just want to go to the school ground to have a look, you might also be caught on camera.”

“Masashi, do you want to go?” Asked another man who came up to him.

“I don’t, thank you.”

“Then we’ll go first, bye.” Then, the two students went out of the classroom.

He couldn’t think that the two balls could create such ruckus, and had even unexpectedly brought in the sports reporters, this was entirely contrary to what Masashi thought would happen. It seems like he had underestimated the Japanese’s passion for baseball too much.

“That kid Rumi, isn’t she usually the one that eats here the most punctual?” On the rooftop, Masashi asked Kazumi.



“Today, reporters are interviewing the baseball club so that she might come a little later,” Kazumi replied.

“While she’s away, I have something to tell you. Remember, please don’t sell me out. Otherwise, I’ll die a miserable death.” Masashi received a cup of tea from Kazumi and said to her.

“I really don’t understand, others are mad to become famous, but you don’t, and not only do you now want to be famous, but you also think of it as a bad thing and even afraid of being known. Brother, I find that you really are weird,” Kazumi said with a smile.

“Listen, fame portends to trouble, you think that becoming famous is a good thing? You take a look at these celebrities, it’s big when they get married and have children, but slightly after arriving at the hospital, they’ll see that they have hemorrhoids, staring at it rigidly. Although it’s impossible to be like them, but being known as a monster in the school, wouldn’t be a pleasant thing. So, you have to help me keep it a secret.”

“Brother, you’re quite disgusting.” Ridiculed Kazumi while hitting him.

They waited for a while and saw Rumi hastily running towards them.

“I’m sorry, I just had an interview in the baseball club, so I’m late.” Rumi apologized while gasping.

“We already know, come and sit down quickly. In fact, we didn’t wait too long.” Kazumi with a smile pulled her to sit down.

“Ah, it seems like our little girl had become a celebrity,” Masashi said with a smile.

“In fact, the people there, and the reporters only wanted to interview the ‘Masked Rider.’” Rumi said as she takes a sip of tea.

“Masked Rider? What do you mean? Masashi asked.

Rumi couldn’t help but laugh while covering her mouth, “It was because the person during the high school practice session with Pang Mu school hit two home runs, but because he was wearing a mask, no one had seen his face, so we called him that. Oh, good laugh.”

Really poor taste in giving a nickname, at that time some people had already started calling his nickname in the game, can’t believe that such thing would be quickly known by everyone.

“I really don’t understand, it was just a practice match, so why be so nervous? Now even reporters are attracted, making such a big fuss over such a small matter.” Masashi said with a sigh.

“But senior, it wasn’t just a home run, but two home runs, such a thing even in professional games would be very difficult to see. If it wasn’t a practice, but an official game, in that same situation, we would have proceeded to the next round. I have a feeling, that

person might make another home run again, because he had made a home run out of such an obvious 'ball'. So I believe that he can certainly do it again." Rumi excitedly reminded them, almost spitting on Masashi like his classmate this morning.

"You're very powerful, you might even get food into my face," Masashi said with a smile.

"I hate you senior." Rumi blushed.

"Rumi, if you go on like this, someone might feel really embarrassed." Kazumi unintentionally looked at him.

"what do you mean?" The baseball girl didn't understand her.

Staring at Kazumi with one eye, Masashi quickly changed the subject and asked Rumi: "Does the reporter have an interview with the odd person?" Thinking that he actually said that he was an odd person, Masashi's heart burst as he forced a smile.

"No, we couldn't find him. After the man hit the last home run, he mysteriously disappeared, we couldn't find him for such a long time now, the worst thing is that not only coach Hisayama, but even the principal is pursuing this important person, the reporters also asked about the 'Masked Rider'. But I don't know why, coach Hisayama wouldn't say anything."

Masashi smiled, he wasn't reluctant to not say anything, but just simply pretended that he didn't know. Before that day when he

went on the field with his false name, it can be said that the coach didn't know anything about him. But the old guy was also quite interesting, to actually let an unknown person like him play. If that day was an official game, Hisayama coach probably wouldn't have the guts to do the same thing.

“It's very strange, I thought that person looked a little familiar, as if I've seen him before.” Rumi suddenly said.

“Oh, today's fish is good, I think I'll have some again tomorrow, Rumi, what do you want to eat tomorrow?” Masashi said with a dry cough.

“I want to eat shrimp roll. Kazumi, please make some shrimp roll tomorrow.” Rumi begged.

“Okay.” Kazumi complied, then looked at Masashi with a faint smile.

Seeing that he had finally successfully diverted Rumi's attention, Masashi secretly relaxed.

It seems like this simple-minded person has a keen intuition. At that time afraid of being recognized by others, he had intentionally avoided making contact with anyone, but he didn't think that he would get recognized by this little rascal.